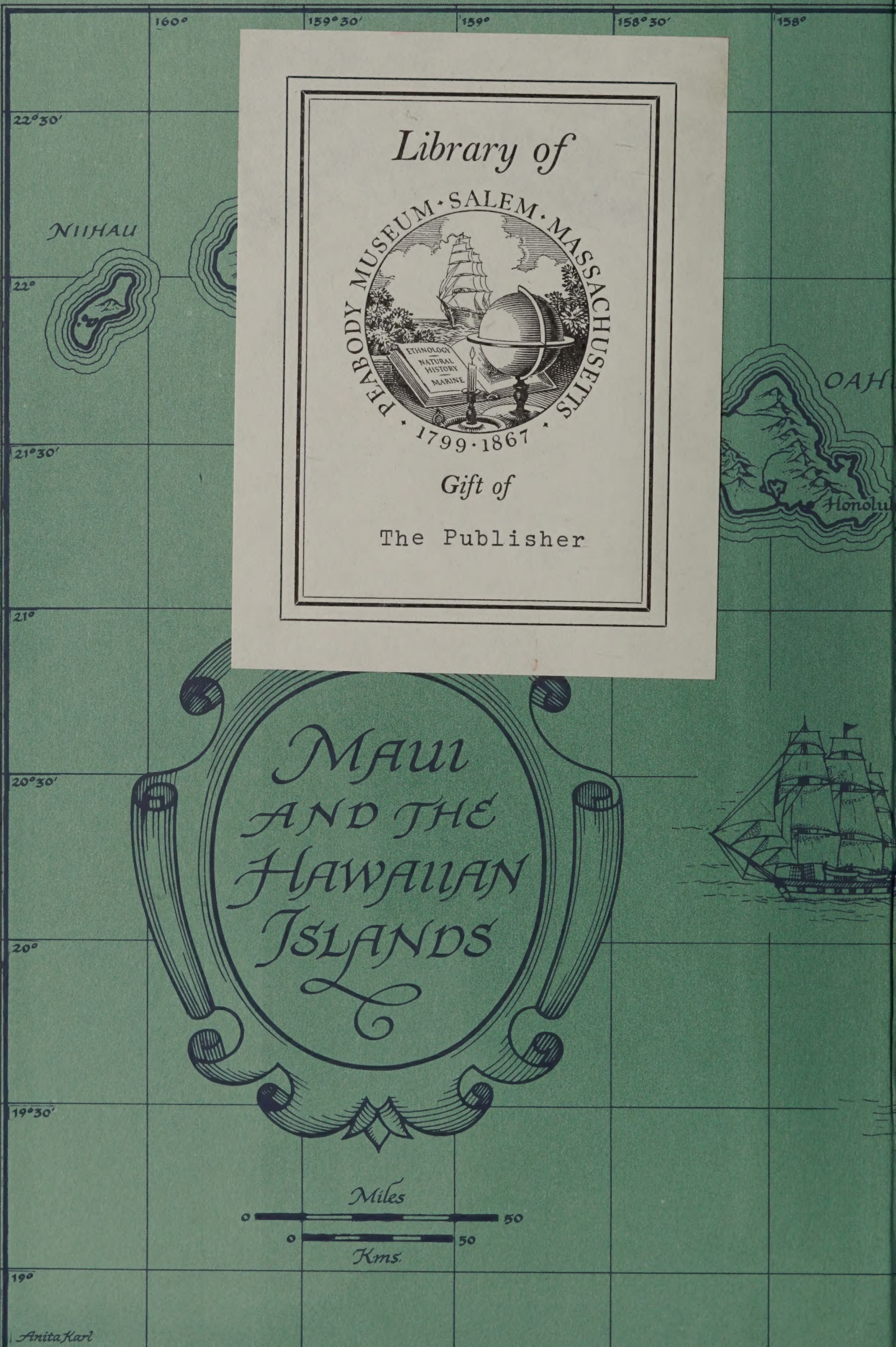
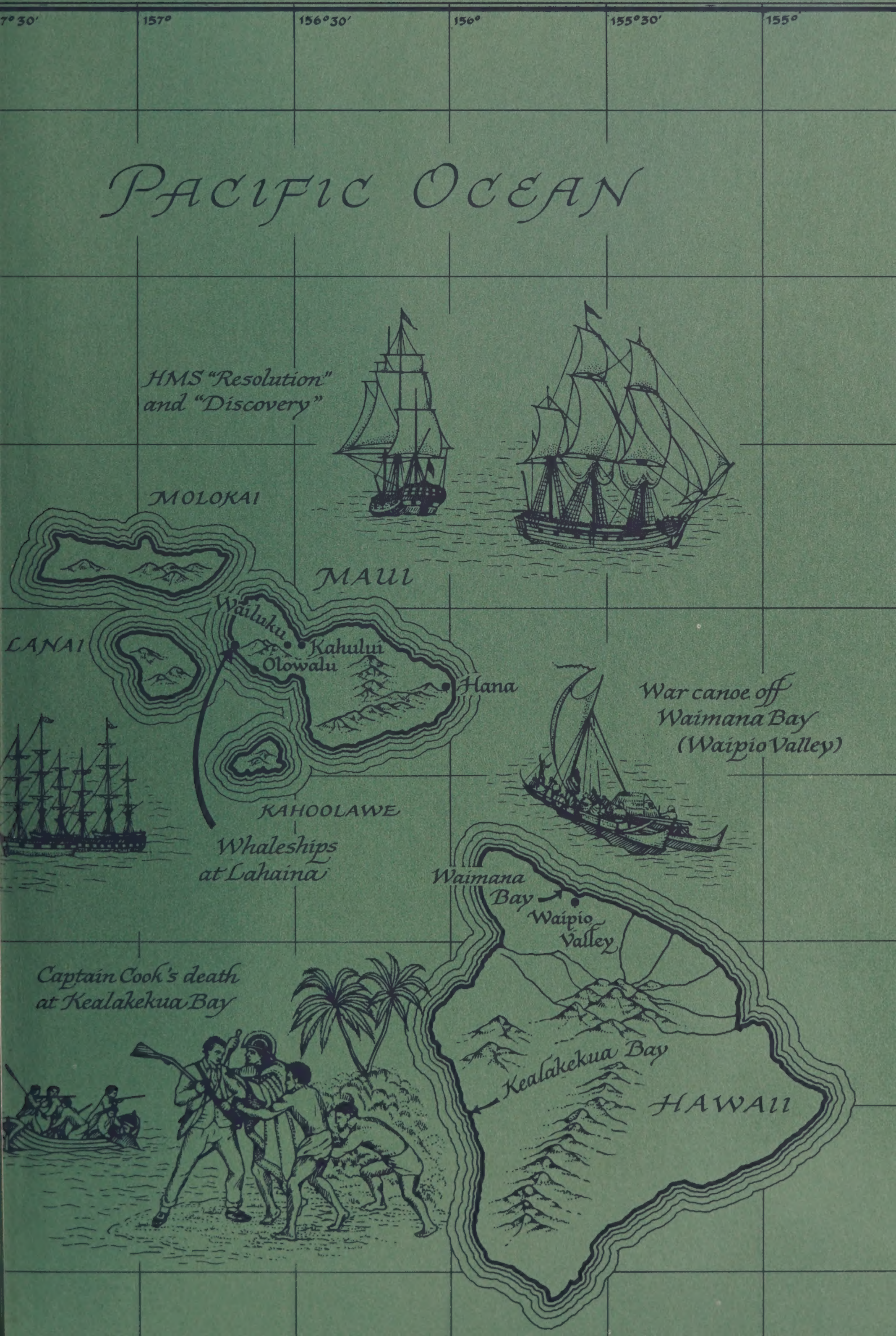
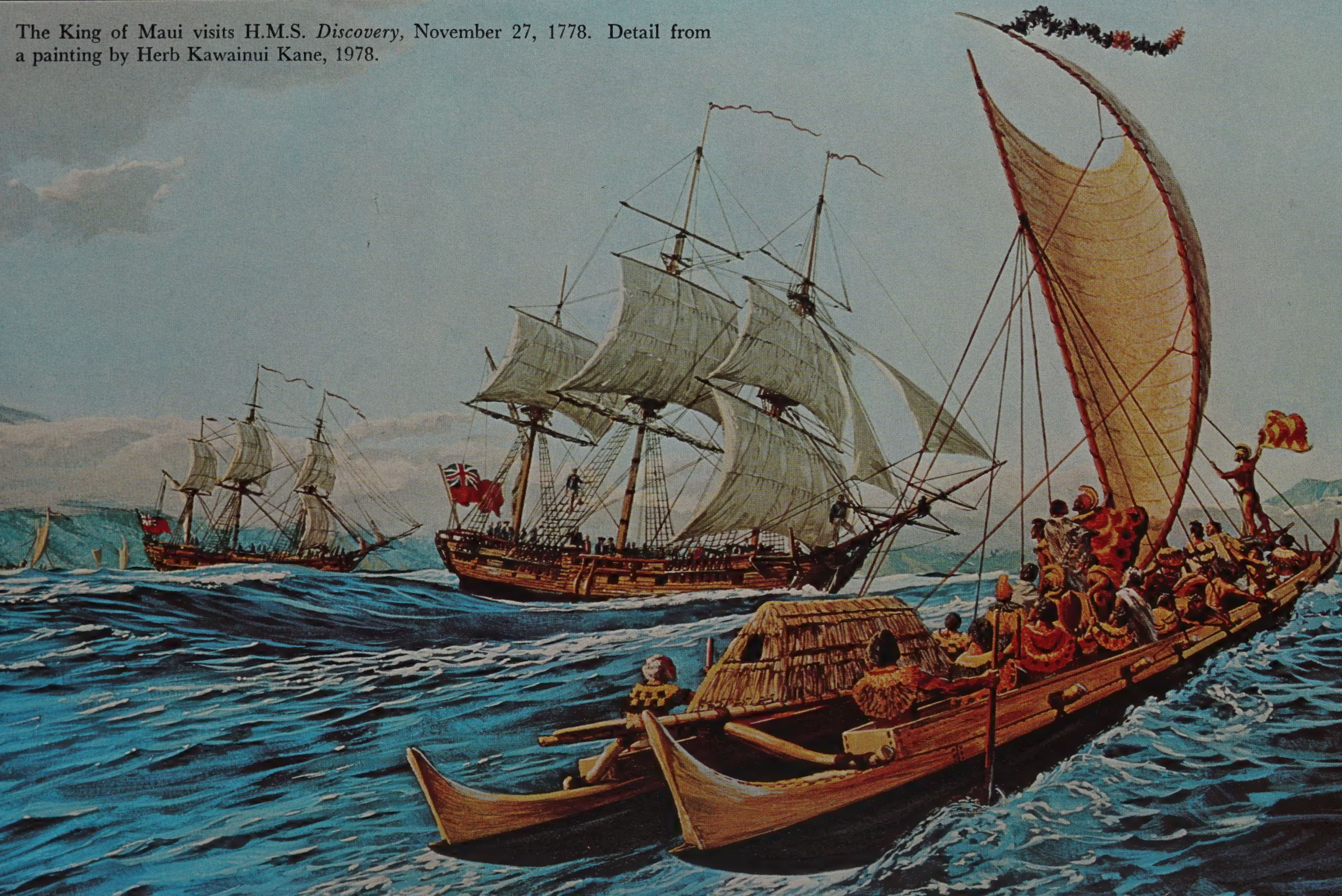
MOWEE


160°
159°30′
159°
158°30′
158°
22°30′
22°
21°30′
21°
20°30′
20°
19°30′
19°
NIIHAU
OAH
Honolu
Maui and the Hawaiian Islands
Miles
0
50
0
50
Kms.
Anita Karl

Library of
PEABODY MUSEUM · SALEM · MASSACHUSETTS
· 1799 · 1867 ·
ETHNOLOGY
NATURAL HISTORY
MARINE
Gift of
The Publisher


7° 30′
157°
156°30′
156°
155°30′
155°
PACIFIC OCEAN
HMS "Resolution" and "Discovery"
MOLOKAI
MAUI
Wailuku
Kahului
Olowalu
Hana
LANAI
KAHOOLAWE
Whaleships at Lahaina
War canoe off Waimana Bay (Waipio Valley)
Waimana Bay
Waipio Valley
Captain Cook's death at Kealakekua Bay
Kealakekua Bay
HAWAII



The King of Maui visits H.M.S. *Discovery*, November 27, 1778. Detail from a painting by Herb Kawainui Kane, 1978.

MOWEE

AN INFORMAL HISTORY OF THE HAWAIIAN ISLAND

by

CUMMINS E. SPEAKMAN, JR.

PEABODY MUSEUM OF SALEM
SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS
1978

c

Copyright © 1978 by Cummins E. Speakman, Jr.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 78-73629

I.S.B.N. 0-87577-056-8

995.1
S741

Printed by The Nimrod Press, Boston, Massachusetts

TO JULIE, JAY, AND CHRIS,
AND THE PEOPLE OF MAUI
FOR WHOM
THIS BOOK HAS BEEN WRITTEN

78

FOREWORD

While there have been many histories written of the Hawaiian Islands as a group there has never before been a history of the single island of Maui—an island that has figured prominently in both Polynesian and European culture, politics, economics, and recreation. We are pleased to have a part in closing this hiatus in island history.

Our deep gratitude and thanks go to the Eaton Foundation, Inc. and the Willard C. Tilson Foundation for grants making it possible for the Peabody Museum to produce this history. We are equally delighted that Dr. Cummins E. Speakman, Jr., an eleven-year resident of Maui and a scholar long and deeply interested in the island, was enthusiastic to undertake the task and has entered vigorously into the research and writing of this book. We are also fortunate to have the talented artist Herb K. Kane of Hawaii paint the picture, reproduced on the dust jacket and frontispiece, showing Captain James Cook's first sighting of the island and his reception by the resplendent Maui chiefs in their canoes. Philip C. F. Smith, Curator of Maritime History and Editor on our staff, has been meticulous in working with Dr. Speakman and seeing the book through the Press.

ERNEST S. DODGE
Director

TABLE OF CONTENTS

FOREWORD v

INTRODUCTION ix

1 THE BEGINNINGS: LAND AND PEOPLE 1

Maui, The Demigod; An Island is Born; The Polynesians Discover Hawaii; Ruling Chiefs; The Sons of Pi'ilani

2 THE HUNDRED YEARS' WAR AND THE DYNASTY OF KE-KAU-LIKE 11

Ka-hekili, Last of Maui's Ruling Chiefs; The Warring Chiefs; The Battle of the Sand Hills

3 THE FATEFUL CONTACT: 1778-1779 19

The Fateful Contact: The Mowee Landfall, November 26-30, 1778; The King of Mowee Offers his Aloha; Cook Meets the Present and Future King; Kealakekua Bay; A Royal Reception; Cook's Death, February 14, 1779; The Voyage Continues; Cook's Achievement

4 THE FINAL BATTLES: 1780-1794 43

The Olowalu Massacre; War of the Hawaiian Succession; Ka-hekili Conquers Oahu; Kamehameha Conquers Maui, 1790

5 FRENCH AND BRITISH ON MAUI: 1786-1796 59

The French Landing; The Fate of La Pérouse; Ships That Passed in the Night: May 30-June 1, 1786; Vancouver, Friend of Hawaii; Vancouver Visits Maui, 1793; Vancouver Argues for Peace

6 WOMEN'S LIB—HAWAIIAN STYLE: 1819-1832 75

"The Favorite Wife"; Hawaii under Ka-'ahu-manu; The "Sacred" Wife; Funerals at Lahaina, 1823-1825; The Death of Ke-opu-o-lani; The Sister of the King; Death of Ka-'ahu-manu

7 CHIEFS, WHALERS, AND MISSIONARIES: THE HEYDAY OF LAHAINA: 1820-1860 93

The Peleleu Fleet; Whaling: Lahaina 1820-1860; Hoapili, Governor of Maui: 1823-1840; The New Learning; Lahainaluna School; Rikeke; The Medical Missionary; The Catholics; The Decline of Whaling

8 SUGAR AND WATER 113

The Versatile Mr. Bailey; The Entrepreneurs of Sugar; The Sugar Magnate; Mr. Spreckels Arrives: Spreckels Makes the Maui Scene; Money and Politics; The Marvelous Mill; Contributions of Spreckels; The Maui Dynasty of Sugar; "H. P." The Maliko Gulch; Sugar and Land; Pineapple; Sugar and Pineapple, 1977

9 FROM MANY LANDS: NEW PEOPLES 135

The Chinese; "Uncle Shinn"; Sun Yat-sen on Maui; The Portuguese; Alfred "Flako" Boteilho; The Japanese; The Filipinos; A.B. Sevilla; Growing Up Hawaiian; The Haoles; The Master of Rose Ranch

10 MAUI REMEMBERED: 1900-1950 165

World War II, The Fourth Marine Division; Camp Maui; The Men From Maui; The Post-War Period; A New Kind of High Chief

11 MAUI: 1958-1978 183

"Da Hipas" (The Hippies); Resort Development; Kaanapali; Kihei; Wailea; Kapalua; The Role of the County; The Private Sector

A NOTE ON SOURCES 197

BASIC REFERENCES (BIBLIOGRAPHY) 201

CHAPTER SOURCES 205

INDEX 225

INTRODUCTION

The island of Maui is the second largest in the Hawaiian chain. In some respects, it is also the richest, and, due to its geographical position between the islands of Hawaii and Oahu, it has played a rather special role in Hawaiian history.

Yet Maui's own history has been neglected. So far as I know, it has not been treated separately but only in fragments in general histories of the Islands. I became aware of this as I found opportunities to study Pacific and Hawaiian history and while offering a course during the winter of 1976-1977 in the History of Maui for Chaminade University of Honolulu.

Various field trips with County Parks personnel and my students took us to archaeological sites on the island. Information from these, together with data gained on hikes and horseback trips during a decade-long residence on Maui, were welcome supplements to the readings we were doing for the course.

Confirming the need for a history of the Valley Isle from scholars, librarians, visitors, county personnel, teachers, and students, I decided to try my hand at writing a history of "my own special island." During the Bicentennial year of 1976, it occurred to me that the publication of the island's history would be an appropriate project for 1978, the bicentennial of Captain James Cook's first sighting of Maui on November 26, 1778.

The work went slowly until the summer of 1977 when I found interesting material on Maui's history in the libraries of the British Museum and especially in the Public Record Office in London. By that time I had decided that the book would be about Maui, the island, rather than the county which includes Molokai, Lanai, and Kaho'olawe.

In September 1977, the Peabody Museum of Salem, Massachusetts, was approached and the project presented to Dr. Ernest S. Dodge, the Director, himself the author of seven books, four of them on Pacific history. The Museum was interested. The project fitted well with its series of publications on Pacific history, and the book was seen as a suitable recognition of the bicentennial year of Captain Cook's voyages to the Hawaiian Islands, which are represented in the Museum by an important ethnographic collection.

Financial support followed from the two foundations. Ernest Dodge, the Museum's Director, acted as senior editor, and Philip C.F. Smith as copy editor. Chad Smith's contribution can be seen in the excellence of the book's total design as well as the careful editing of every section in it. It was a privilege to work with these distinguished scholars and I acknowledge with deep thanks their help and the support of the foundations. With publication by the Museum assured, work on the book resumed in earnest in October 1977.

In writing this informal history, I have tried to tread the fine line between a scholarly work and one that is written for the general reader. The sources and references are all found in the sections following the main text, where they are easily referred to by scholars, and footnotes are generally provided within the text. Emphasis on the subtitle is on "informal" as this does not pretend to be a comprehensive history. No doubt other historians will take exception to some interpretations, although I have been careful to qualify statements, especially about events before 1820, by saying "it is believed" or "it is said that."

Many people in Hawaii helped with this book: more than I can acknowledge by name. Most of all, I am indebted to Inez Ashdown, unofficial County Historian for *kokua* from her research, for teaching me appreciation for the old Hawaiian culture, and for encouragement and inspiration. Genie Bakris at the Kahului Library never hesitated to take on my most difficult (and often obscure) requests for information and acted as "general reader" for the first chapters. Captain Aubrey Janion, who writes of Hawaii's history, and Colonel Robert Doe, who taught it for years in schools and college, were friendly sources as was Virginia Wirtz, Director of the Maui Museum and Historical Society. Bob Fiddes was helpful in checking dates and events during World War II.

Mayor Elmer Cravalho encouraged me in the project, and Ron Youngblood assisted with information on county affairs. My neighbor, Armond Janssen, a longtime Maui resident and school man, loaned me several old books on Hawaii, from his library.

Former students John and Mollie Geyer and Roberta Mercado helped with research and cheered me on. Charlie Keau was a knowledgeable guide to the archaeological sites on Maui and added to my understanding of Hawaiian ways.

The librarians at Wailuku and Maui Community College, as well as those at Kahului, were ever ready to render aid and encouragement to publish.

From Oahu, June Gutmanis, an experienced and able researcher and editor, came over to act as local editor for the first half of the book. She collected some of the illustrations for me and made copies of others, which I have used in this book. Dr. Kenneth Emory, Senior Anthropologist at the Bishop Museum in Honolulu, made many good suggestions over lunches at the Tapa Lanai at the Museum.

Mrs. Timberlake and her staff at the Bishop Museum Library; Mrs. Barbara Edkins, Librarian at the Peabody Museum of Salem; Ms. Dorota Starzecka, Assistant Keeper, the Ethnography Department of the British Museum; and Mr. G. Graham, Director of the Whitby Museum, Whitby, England, led me to materials on Hawaiian history, Cook's voyages, and British and American whaling that I would not otherwise have seen.

Special thanks go to Dot Russell, who patiently typed and retyped my manuscript, to Herb Kane for his handsome illustration done especially for the book's dust jacket, and to Anita Karl for the end-paper maps. Helen Toms first suggested using the files of the Lahaina Restoration Foundation. Larry Ikeda and other officials of the plantations generously filled my requests for information or illustrations. My son, Cummins E. Speakman III, was an ideal travelling companion and assistant as I completed research in England in June 1978.

Finally, to my brother-in-law, Harry Freeman Rice, and his wife Pat, who were responsible for my opportunities to study in England, and to my wife Julie, who held the fort, *mahalo a nui loa.*

This book is about people. Naturally, like most histories, the story is told in terms of leaders, but throughout I have tried to provide insights into the lives of the common people of Maui who make up the essential fabric of the island's life.

C.E.S. Jr.

Hale Kuau
Paia, Maui
October 1978

MOWEE

1

THE BEGINNINGS: LAND AND PEOPLE

In which the Maui legend is told, the geological origins of the land examined, the arrival of the Polynesians (500 and 1000 A.D.) discussed; and the story of an early dynasty of ruling chiefs related.

The various explorers from the West who discovered Pacific islands between the years 1500 and 1900 usually named them for friends, patrons, members of their crews, places in Europe, or even for some impressive characteristic of an island's terrain. In one case Captain James Cook, piloting his ships through a stormy sea, named a treacherous headland "Cape Foul Weather."

When Captain Cook first came upon the islands of Hawaii he named them "The Sandwich Islands," in honor of the Earl of Sandwich, First Lord of the Admiralty and a patron of his Pacific voyages. However, there was no need to name these islands individually because each bore a distinguishable name, all of Polynesian origin. Even the name Sandwich Islands did not persist and the individual islands retained their ancient names.

Cook learned the true name of "the saddle shaped island" as he cruised off its northern shore in November 1778. On the 30th of November, he wrote "Mowee" in the log of the *Resolution*, thus putting it down in writing for the first time in history. Maui is a name with very ancient roots, perhaps even antedating the most ancient Polynesian migrations.

Maui, The Demigod

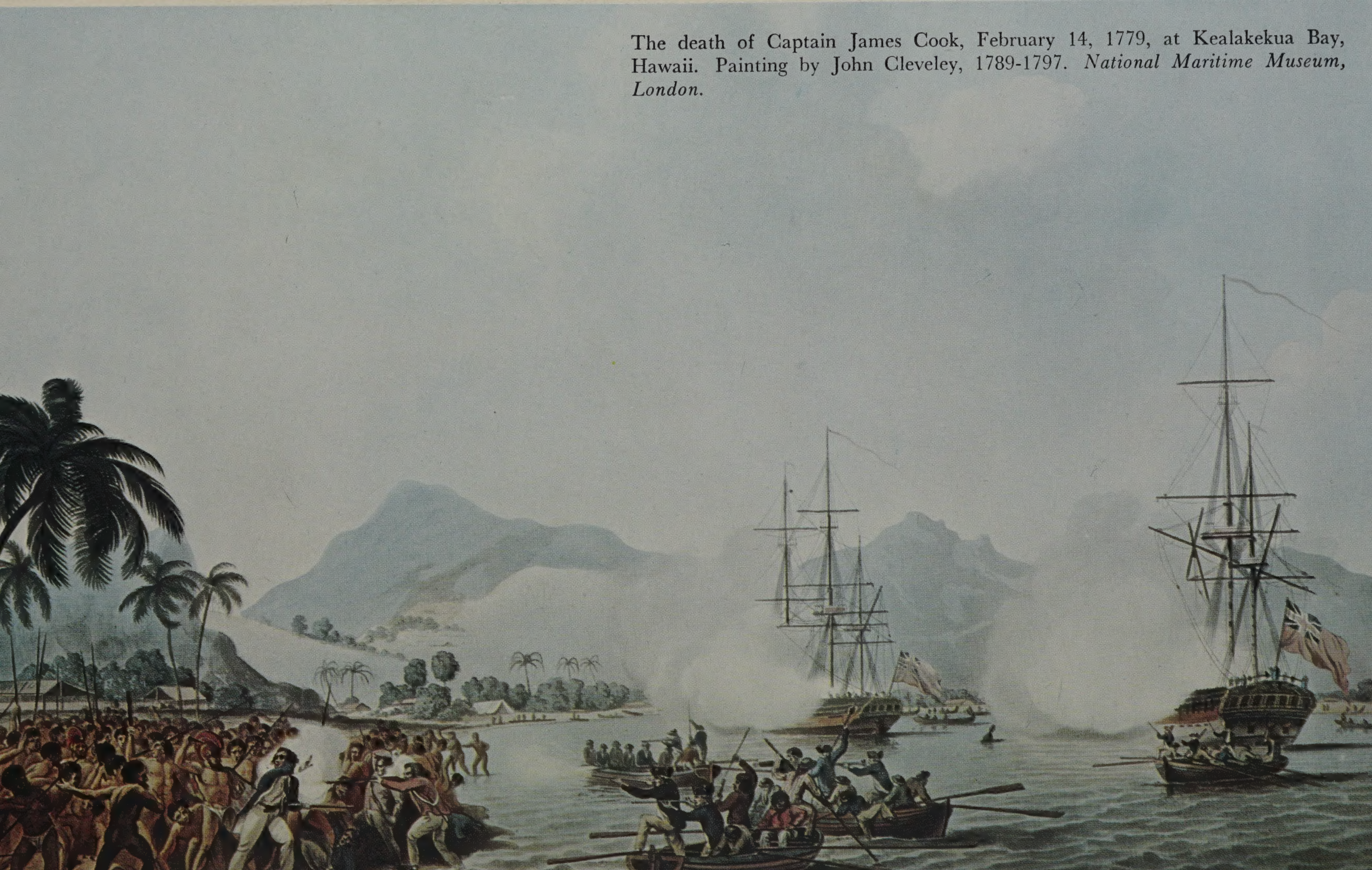
It is possible that Maui is simply a local place name, but it is widely believed to have derived from either the Polynesian demigod, *Maui-tikitiki-a-Taranga,* or an actual warrior-hero or great discoverer by that name. Stories of the demigod are recounted in all the Polynesian lands of the Pacific. "Priests, chiefs, and commoners tell stories about this versatile and capricious character who ranged over the sea, sky, earth, and underworld to defy the gods and enrich mankind."

Royalty of almost every Pacific land claims descent from Maui, and the royal family of Hawaii was no exception—the last Hawaiian monarchs included Maui in their genealogies.

According to the many legends, Maui was a tricky demigod but, nevertheless, irresistible and blessed with extraordinary powers. These legends tell how Maui stole fire, raised the sky and snared the sun, fished up land and trapped winds, founded dynasties, changed landscapes, made useful inventions, terrified strong men, and rescued beautiful maidens. These fabulous deeds earned the culture-hero the name of *Maui-tinihanga*, "Maui-of-a-thousand-tricks."

Among all these powers, legend claims Maui as the founder of the Hawaiian Islands. He fished them up from the sea. In at least one Hawaiian legend he is credited with "redesigning"

The crater of Mt. Haleakala ("House of the Sun"). *Robert Wenkam, Friends of the Earth.*



The death of Captain James Cook, February 14, 1779, at Kealakekua Bay, Hawaii. Painting by John Cleveley, 1789-1797. *National Maritime Museum, London.*

First Man by breaking him at the ankles, knees, and hips to create joints; then tearing the limbs loose from their webs of skin so that man could move about.

All the Polynesian legends agree that Maui arrested the sun's progress and regulated its course. Fornander, in tracing the origins of the Polynesian people, believed that the universality of the Maui legends points strongly to a common origin.

The best-known legend in Hawaii with respect to Maui is the story of how he captured the sun in a net in the Crater of Haleakala to prolong its passage over the island. The Maui legend of snaring the sun is found in numerous sources and almost as many different versions. Here is the version found in Wenkam, *Maui, The Last Hawaiian Place:*

"When Maui lived on the island that bears his name he brought off his greatest Hawaiian exploit.

"The days were short on Maui Island. The gathering of bark and pounding of tapa required all day, and there was insufficient time remaining after pounding the wet tapa for it to dry before the sun dipped below the mountain rim. No time remained for the people to cook their food before dark and bring in the fishing nets they had laid out before dawn."

Maui resolved to snare the sun and halt its swift flight across the sky. He wove a cord from his sister's pubic hair, twisted it into throw lengths, and with these thrown over his shoulder, climbed to the summit of Haleakala, House of the Sun, and there awaited the light above the eastern rim.

When the Sun God stood full against the eastern sky, Maui lassoed him between the legs, a fighting technique that later Polynesian warriors would practice on their enemies. Maui beat the Sun God with a magic jawbone, permanently crippling him. The maimed sun now moves slowly across the sky and gives the people time to dry their tapa, bring in the nets, carefully extract the small fish caught in the mesh, and cook before dark.

Maui met a spectacular end. Seeking to gain immortality for himself and for the human race, he approached his beautiful but cruel ancestress, the great Hina of the Underworld. Maui found her asleep on her back. Believing that he could find the hidden source of life in her body and carry it back to mankind so that men might escape the indignity of death, Maui crawled between great Hina's thighs. "Maui's head disappeared, then his broad shoulders and chest. Hina did not stir. Finally only his legs stuck out. . . ." Some enchanted birds, friends of Maui, who were watching, laughed. "Hina awoke, saw what was happening and, squeezing her legs together, crushed Maui."

This last trick of *Maui-tinihanga* was disastrous and, though it proved the end of Maui the demigod, the name lives on in the name of the island which some still find "irresistible."

An Island Is Born

The Hawaiian island chain was created by lava flowing up from fissures in the sea bottom and coral building near the sea's surface. This process has been going on for at least twenty-five million years. Volcanic explosions of vast size created separate chains of volcanoes which, in some cases, joined to make one or more islands. Over these ages a continuous flow of lava helped tie them together with rock, then soil, and finally sand from the surrounding reefs.

In such a way the island of Maui was created. In the same way all along the great rift that had opened up in the Pacific's floor, other islands were formed. The second largest, Maui was formed out of two volcanoes or volcanic complexes. These eventually became dormant and were joined into a single island, at first by the erosion of wind and rain and further by flows of lava.

There followed periods when the surrounding waters rose and fell. In this earth-building process, the islands of Kaho'olawe, Lanai, West Maui, East Maui, and Molokai, at first separate volcanoes, became joined into one large island. Later, in stages which included the great submergence during the Olowalu stage, a two hundred and fifty foot stand of the sea, they became separate islands, and the steep valleys became deeply filled with alluvium.

At another, still later stage, East and West Maui were united once more in a period called Kahipa when the sea level fell about three hundred feet and Hana and Kaupo mud flows began to fill the canyons of East Maui. Finally, Maui took its present form (during the period called Waipio) when the sea stood at minus sixty feet, and dunes formed on the isthmus.

At some point in ancient times, seeds from other lands reached the island through storm-tossed birds, floating debris, or airborne spores, there to sprout upon newly formed shores. Soil building increased as vegetation became rooted and died to add organic strength to the volcanic sediments. Vast quantities of fresh water were brought to the islands by the Pacific trade winds, fertilizing the rich soil. Much of this beneficent moisture filtered through the porous rocks to be stored in underground reservoirs.

The island of Maui, with its two volcanoes, was still growing, unknown to the world of men, while great monuments arose in the Tigris and Euphrates valley and the rich culture of the Pharaohs blossomed in Egypt. In China, men were developing a highly sophisticated system of thought while others in Japan codified art principles that would enrich the world. Jesus of Nazareth pursued his ministry in Jerusalem, and Mohammed emerged from the Arabian desert with a new vision of Heaven.

These tiny specks of green in the northern Pacific Ocean slept in the sun—virginal, unimagined, a paradise ready to awaken.

The Polynesians Discover Hawaii

Toward the beginning of the Christian era two thousand years ago, a relatively short span of time in terms of the earth's age, a strong, sea-loving, tan-skinned people of Eastern Asia migrated to the Indonesian Archipelago, fanning out from there to the islands of the South Pacific. They settled briefly in Fiji, then migrated to Samoa, whence they are believed to have settled in New Zealand, Tahiti, the Marquesas, and later to have made the astounding voyages that brought them north across the empty seas to Hawaii. These people, the Polynesians, settled within the area which reaches from New Zealand to Easter Island to Hawaii and is known as the Polynesian Triangle. Very early in their migrations the Polynesians developed a high technical skill in boat building and navigation.

By the sixth century A.D., Polynesians had settled on the Hawaiian islands, where they remained comparatively unknown for about five centuries, or until about 1000 A.D. Sometime during that century several parties of fresh immigrants from the Society and Marquesas groups are believed to have arrived at the Hawaiian islands, and for the space of five or six generations they maintained active intercourse with the islands far to the south, especially Tahiti.

No one knows just where the first discoverers, the legendary

Menehune, landed. But there is a tradition that the second wave, the Ali'i, found its first landing place at South Point on the island of Hawaii, while still other traditions point to landings at the Waipio Valley on Hawaii and on the island of Molokai.

There is a tradition on Maui that the voyagers from Tahiti settled on the leeward side along the southern shore. This tradition is borne out by the name of an area of ancient ruins called Kahiki-nui, the word Kahiki being Hawaiian for Tahiti (or "horizon").

However, the line of great warrior chiefs of divine lineage descended from the Tahitians became established on the island of Hawaii, where oral genealogies and chants celebrated their exploits. These are the very first records we have of the island people, because they did not develop a written language.

Fornander speaks of the eleventh century as a period when "Polynesian folklore in all the groups becomes replete with heroic legends and songs of remarkable men, bold expeditions, great adventures and voyages to far-off lands." After this period, the intercourse of the Hawaiians with the Society Islands appears to have ceased, and no more is heard of these exploits except for the bare genealogical tree.

During the first century or two of the second period, intercourse with the distant southern homelands was maintained by means of the great Polynesian sailing canoes. These were sometimes over 100 feet long, double-hulled with large platforms and shelters. They were capable of sustaining sixty to eighty people with all their gear for voyages of 1,800 to 2,000 miles nonstop.

A century ago, Fornander himself saw one hull near South Point, Hawaii, that measured 108 feet. But the art of making and navigating these great vessels seems to have declined about

1200 or 1300 A.D. when the Hawaiians became, for another 500 years, isolated from any further contacts with other lands.

Ruling Chiefs

One of the most famous chiefs in Hawaiian prehistory was Umi-a-Liloa ("son of Liloa") who, probably sometime during the sixteenth century or early seventeenth century, succeeded in uniting the districts of the big island of Hawaii into a kingdom. Umi thus deserves the title, Ruling Chief, or *Moi*, a Hawaiian word which is generally translated in most histories by the English word "king", although king, strictly speaking, should be used only for the Kamehamehas whose progenitor united all the islands into a true kingdom.

While Umi ruled Hawaii, a powerful chief on Maui achieved the unification of the districts of Maui by war. His name was Pi'ilani, and he gave his daughter in marriage to Umi on Hawaii. Her name was Pi'ikea and, because of her birth and her beauty, she became the principal and favorite wife of Umi.

The marriage of this high chiefess and the Moi of Hawaii was a factor in the long peace which marked the reigns of these two famous ruling chiefs. "From the beginning of Umi's reign until he became old, there was continued peace with his father-in-law, Pi'ilani, ruler of Maui, and with his chiefs. No battle was fought between the two kingdoms. After the death of Pi'ilani, father of Pi'ikea, trouble began with the heir of the kingdom."

The Sons of Pi'ilani

The great Maui chief had two sons, both born of a mother of the highest rank. The chief willed Maui to his eldest son, Lono-a-Pi'ilani, but on the father's death the rivalry between the sons erupted into open hostility, and Kiha-a-Pi'ilani, the younger, was forced to flee when Lono sought to kill him. While a refugee living incognito at Hana, Kiha fell in love with a young chiefess, Koleamoku, the daughter of the paramount chief of the Hana districts.

The legends tell of the meeting of Kiha and the fair chiefess at Hana Bay where the two came to enjoy the Ke-anini surf. Kiha, reared on Oahu, was a champion of the long surf at Waikiki, but the chief's daughter soon taught him how to master the short surf of the bay.

Kiha was filled with desire for the chiefess, although unaware that her father had promised her in marriage to the ruling chief, his brother Lono. Kolea fell deeply in love with the younger and more handsome Kiha and, on a day of perfect surfing, the youths rode exhilarated to the beach where they made love. Kolea "was determined to have him for a husband but her father was set against it because she was betrothed to the ruling chief. . . ."

Nevertheless, the two were secretly married, and Kolea gave birth to a son. Lono immediately made war against his brother who, with his new wife, took refuge with his sister and her husband, Umi, on the Big Island. Umi took the side of the younger brother, Kiha, and, after "the long peace," a bitter war between Hawaii and Maui was launched. Umi provided a vast fleet of war canoes and many warriors, an invasion of Maui was set afoot, and Lono was defeated.

The legend tells that on learning of the victory of Umi and Kiha, Lono died of fright. The victors divided Maui, and the Hana districts fell under the control of the chief of Hawaii. Apparently, Kiha and Kolea (along with Kumaka, his brave and faithful first wife) "lived happily ever after," and became the ancestors of many a Maui chieftain.

Kiha's name is forever preserved in Maui history as the builder of the Kiha-a-Pi'ilani Highway which circles the western part of the island and joins with the straight and smoothly paved highway which was begun by ancient chiefs and finished by the Moi, Pi'ilani, the father. This part of the highway is the eastern roadway running by way of Kaupo and through the crater. Remains of the Pi'ilani Highway are to be found today in some places but more often have disappeared beneath the roadbed of the modern highway around the island, still called by its ancient name. The name is also preserved in that of the great *heiau* at Hana, the Hale-o-Pi'ilani (or House of Pi'ilani), itself as remarkable a monument as the highway.

Umi assisted in building the island roadway, and the friendship of the two ruling families continued to give the people of Maui and Hawaii another long period of peace. One of the most beautiful spots on Maui is the high place at Haiku called The Hill of Umi. Maui, in this period, came to be called "The Haven of Pi'ilani," and the people of Maui were to look back with longing to this era in their history when the wars of the chiefs in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries became a painful burden on the land and its people.

2

THE HUNDRED YEARS' WAR AND THE DYNASTY OF KE-KAU-LIKE

In which the early wars on Maui are reviewed, the High Chief Ke-kau-like establishes his rule over the island kingdom and wills it to his son who rules in peace for a generation; the son is followed by his brother who, through war, conquers all the islands except Hawaii, the warrior chiefs of which continue to threaten the power of Maui's last great ruling chief.

Historians sometimes speak of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries in Hawaiian history as the period of the "hundred years' war" or wars. Around 1700, one chief, a descendant of the Pi'ilani chiefs, established through war a powerful and united "kingdom" on Maui. His name was Ke-kau-like, "The Just." His sons fought over the succession briefly but continued to rule Maui for over half a century. For some time, they gave their people peaceful years, but during the last decades the island of Maui was devastated, and its people, especially the commoners, were living in poverty. By the end of the eighteenth century, even the chiefs were impoverished. Vancouver, when he visited King Ka-hekili of Maui in 1793, found that not even the king himself could supply his ships with provisions as the English moved along the southeast coast of Maui and anchored at Lahaina.

War seems to have been less predominant in Hawaiian antiquity—the very early period was that of long voyages, settlement, and survival which took up the energies later devoted to hostilities. By tradition, the ruling alii were inspired and gave the best laws, the *Kanawai Akua*, or God's Laws, to the priests, who in turn gave the laws to the chiefs. These latter had the duty to proclaim the laws and see that the commoners obeyed them.

The ancient battles appear to have been the affairs of the alii. Fought according to long established rules of warfare, they seldom, if ever, involved the entire population. But for several centuries before Kamehameha conquered and killed the warring chiefs, the battles of the chiefs on the islands and between the islands themselves periodically kept the people in turmoil. After 1778, the whole character of these wars changed as iron weapons and then firearms were introduced.

By the third decade of the eighteenth century, major battles for control of the islands were constantly in progress. Alapa'i was the ruling chief of the island of Hawaii. He sought to subdue Maui, was unsuccessful, and was counterattacked by the warrior king of Maui, Ke-kau-like, who raided the island of Hawaii, killing many warriors and devastating the lands at Kona and Kohala, where he abused the country people. He cut down all the coconut trees at Kawaihae, another insulting act of war as coconut trees had very special significance for the Hawaiians. He slaughtered the people of Kohala, across the channel from Hana, seized their possessions, and returned to Maui.

Previous to these raids, Ke-kau-like had erected temple platforms dedicated to the gods of war in the Kaupo area, and it was there that he settled to make ready for further conquest of the Big Island.

"But God ordered it otherwise, for he was seized with a violent illness, or epilepsy, called, 'Eyes-drawn-heavenward' (*ka-maka-huki-lani*) which defied the skill of the doctors. Hence the succession of the land was settled at Kaupo, and Kamehameha-nui* was made ruler of the land of Maui."

Ke-kau-like, hearing that Alapa'i was at Kohala preparing to attack Maui, was afraid and, though ill, fled in his double war canoe to West Maui. He sailed with his officers, war leaders, and his many wives and children along the leeward side of the island, some of his warriors and retinue traveling by land along the Pi'ilani Highway. The fleet landed below Kula, and a litter was prepared for the dying king, who was carried overland to a place called Haleki'i. There he died. The ashes of his flesh were placed in the waters of the Iao stream, which carried them to the mother sea whence he had come. His bones were hidden in the caves near the *heiau*.

Today, little remains of this once sacred temple platform, and the place is thickly overgrown with guava and kukui trees. The large stone used as a sort of mortuary table is still in place, but the *heiau*, completely neglected, has become so thickly overgrown as to be almost inaccessible. Ke-kau-like was the last of the Maui alii to be interred at Iao.

"Alapa'i sailed from Kohala with a great company of the chiefs of Hawaii, his war leaders, warriors, and district chiefs. . . . But when he landed at Mokulau in Kaupo and heard that Ke-kau-like was dying, he gave up all thought of war and wished only to meet Ke-kau-like and his (Alapa'i's) sister the chief wife of Ke-kau-like. He had heard that Kamehameha-nui had been chosen ruler over Maui and he had no desire to make war on his sister's child."

---

* Not to be confused with Kamehameha I.

Despite the support of Alapa'i, a fratricidal battle for the succession to the Maui kingdom ensued. Another son of Ke-kau-like challenged his half brother. He was Ka-uki.

For several years after Ke-kau-like's death, the war continued. A major battle took place at Honokawai in West Maui. The forces of Alapa'i and the young Maui heir were badly mauled and withdrew. Another battle occurred in which the ruling chief of Oahu fought in alliance with Ka-uki, the challenger. The hardest fighting happened at Pu'unene in the dry central plain of Maui. The slaughter was great on both sides, and a stalemate resulted in a peaceful settlement between the ruling chiefs.

Kamehameha-nui's rule of Maui was confirmed. He ruled the Maui kingdom for twenty-nine years. He had many wives and children, none of whom succeeded him. In his last illness while at Hana, he named his favorite brother, Ka-hekili-nui-ahu-manu ("The Thunder King"), as his heir. Kamehameha-nui's body lay at the *heiau* at Paukukalo, and later his remains were removed to the burial place of high chiefs on the island of Molokai.

Ka-hekili, Last of Maui's Ruling Chiefs

The Thunder King's reign over Maui lasted for about twenty-five years. He was the last of the traditional high, or "sacred," alii to rule, and, though he ruled in peace for a time, his reign is notable for the bitter wars which culminated in his defeat by Kamehameha the Great in 1790 and his death on Oahu in 1794.

The fortunes and misfortunes of this warrior chief dominated the history of Maui, "the island between," during the last half of the eighteenth century. The story is complicated by the seesaw of war—war between Hawaii and Maui, between Maui and Oahu—and by the complex battles within these islands between rival chiefs. Ka-hekili was in the thick of all these struggles even in old age, and before he lost the prize, the united kingdom, he had conquered Molokai, Lanai, Oahu, and placed his brother Ka-'eo on Kauai as ruling chief. Hawaii, alone, he failed to conquer. Although he tried on several occasions, he was repulsed each time.

The history of Ka-hekili's period is further complicated for the reader, especially one who does not know Hawaiian, by the names and locations of battles, the names of the chiefs and their battle leaders, their wives and children, and most of all by the close blood or adoptive relationships and marriage bonds between them. A partial family tree of the Maui royal family established by Ka-kau-like may help in understanding the blood connections but does not show what the real relationships were, as, among the alii, blood was not always thicker than water, and the most fierce battles of the eighteenth-century ruling chiefs transpired between close relatives.

The Warring Chiefs

Ka-hekili's greatest enemy was the ruling chief of Hawaii, Ka-lani-'opu'u, another fighting chief who, throughout his rule of the Big Island, sought again and again to conquer Maui. He never took the whole island but succeeded in taking over the Hana districts for a period of about twenty years and came back for several brief interludes and raids after that.

After Ka-lani-'opu'u's death, and the death of his sons, Kamehameha became the chief on Hawaii and the mortal enemy of the aging Ka-hekili.

During the early, peaceful years of Ka-hekili's reign, or perhaps before, his sister, the High Chiefess Ka-lola, became the principal wife of Ka-lani-'opu'u, who initiated the long war between these brothers-in-law by "mercilessly beating the people of Kaupo with clubs" and otherwise mistreating them. Ka-hekili retaliated by taking the fortress of Ka'uiki, killing its defenders, and driving out the Hawaiian chiefs who had so long controlled the districts of Hana, Kipahulu, and Kaupo.

About 1775, the Hawaiian king returned with his war canoes and raided the Hana districts but was defeated at Kaupo. This persistent chief, known as an indomitable warrior, was never to gain control of all Maui. However, in the following year, he mounted a full-scale attack, took Hana, and proceeded with his fleet of war canoes to Makena and then to Ma'alaea.

The Battle of the Sand Hills

" 'This is the house of your god; open the sluice gate that the fish may enter.' These were the words of the high priest to Ka-hekili at the dedication of the war *heiau* at Wailuku as the king prepared for invasion from Hawaii. It meant, 'The war god is in his house and favors your victory; fall back to let the enemy into your net and kill them like fish.' "

Ka-hekili deployed his forces on either side of the plain, hidden in the sand hills above the *heiau*. Ka-lani-'opu'u sent his elite squadron toward Wailuku to spearhead the attack. These were the crack troops called Alapa, consisting of 800 men, "all expert spearpoint breakers, every one of whose spears went straight to the mark like arrows . . . Across the plains . . . their helmets . . . shone like crescents in the sun." All were eager with the thought that the Alapa were soon to drink the cool waters of Wailuku.

Ka-hekili was lying in wait for them. The high priest said, "The fish have entered the sluice; draw the net." The battle took place to seaward of the sand hills near Wailuku. The Alapa were defeated in a terrible slaughter. When the net was drawn only two men escaped to bear the awful news to Ka-lani-'opu'u, who was taken with a chill and mournfully wailed for the dead.

He consulted his war leaders, one of them his favorite, Kamehameha, and the remaining fighters. They said, "To-morrow we will drink the waters of Wailuku and rest in the shade of Hekuawa."

Ka-hekili and his ally and nephew, the ruling chief of Oahu, prepared another fish net, and again the fish swam into it. Ka-hekili's men rose before dawn and took their stand in the sand hills, some toward the Waikapu turn. The invading force from Hawaii found a divided front from which the spears poured down on them "like a swift rainstorm." The terrified soldiers were surrounded and fled.

Ka-lani-'opu'u, seeing his men surrounded and facing total defeat and death, asked his wife, Ka-lola, to intercede with her brother Ka-hekili. She refused but suggested that their son, the young chief of divine rank, Kiwala'o, be sent to his uncle to sue for peace.

As Kiwala'o approached Wailuku, garbed in his splendid red and yellow feather cloak* and helmet, the Maui soldiers fell to the ground on both sides in deference to his rank and because of the severe tabu which required prostration to avoid facing the sacred back of a chief. The Maui defenders reluctantly observed the kapu.

Ka-hekili, seeing his approach, "turned his face upward (a sign of a favorable reception)", Kiwala'o entered and sat on the chest of his uncle**, who embraced him. A truce was arranged and Ka-hekili said, " 'Let live! Let the battle cease!' and he asked, 'Where is my sister (Ka-lola)?' Ka-hekili then sent food to his brother-in-law and the chiefs became reconciled. But Ka-lani-'opu'u's was a feigned friendship.' "

Only a few years later, the Hawaii king returned to war on Maui, killing many people at Kaupo and sailing on to Lahaina. Ka-hekili again prepared for battle, and fighting took place near Kaanapali. In the battle, the warrior chief Kamehameha distinguished himself for bravery and skill in war. The Hawaii chiefs then carried the war to the island of Lanai which was cruelly devastated. The food ran out and Ka-lani-'opu'u set sail along the north shore of Maui, raiding the Hamakua villages as he approached Hana.

It was at Wailua-iki or at Hana that Ka-lani-'opu'u and the remnants of his fighting forces first saw the strange "floating heiaus of Lono," the ships of the Cook expedition. It was November 1778.

---

* The Kiwala'o Cloak: He may have worn the very cloak which later belonged to Kamehameha and hangs in the main hall of the Bishop Museum, Honolulu.

** Fathers of children of higher rank received them publicly in this way as it was a mark of respect for rank to keep the child's head higher than that of the father. The phrase is quoted from Kamakau's book, *Ruling Chiefs of Hawaii.*

3

THE FATEFUL CONTACT: 1778-1779

In which Captain James Cook and his men become the first known Europeans to see the island of Maui, chart its position on the world map, observe and trade with its people, and in which the two most powerful ruling chiefs and the future king of Hawaii visit the tall ships, meet Haoles for the first time, exchange names and presents with the captains, and observe the technology from another world which will eventually prove fatal to the old order of Hawaiian society.

> It was not the Hawaiians as a people who deified Cook, but the priests of Lono. It was not the Hawaiians as a people who killed him, but the chiefs and their fighting men, devotees of Ku, the war god, acting as protectors of their ruler, Ka-lani-'opu'u . . . *Gavan Daws,* Shoal of Time.

For two hundred years before Captain James Cook found Hawaii, the Spanish had been crossing the Pacific. They made regular crossings from Acapulco in Mexico to the Philippines, and there are some good reasons for believing that the Hawaiian Islands were known to them. However, final proof of this is lacking.

A chart captured from a Spanish vessel by the British Lord Anson in 1743 showed islands situated ten degrees off the longitude of Hawaii. The mistake in charting could have been caused by the Equatorial currents, then unknown, but more probably it resulted from the inaccuracy of sixteenth- and seventeenth-century navigating instruments. Approximate latitude could be determined with relative ease, but at that time no shipboard instrument capable of finding longitude had been invented.

La Pérouse, Maui's first European visitor, followed the Spanish charts and, finding nothing where in 1542 the Spanish navigator Juan Gaetano was supposed to have found islands, sailed straight on to make his Hawaiian landfall. La Pérouse, a great admirer of Cook, still gave the latter credit for the discovery but was apparently convinced that Gaetano's islands were, in fact, the Hawaiian Archipelago.

Even more convincing are the journals of Vancouver's voyage, which indicate the general belief on board his ships that the islands called Los Majos on the Spanish chart were, indeed, the windward islands of the Hawaiian chain.

Finally, according to the English missionary William Ellis, there was a tradition among the chiefs on Hawaii of landings by white men well before Cook arrived. One story was repeated by Hawaiians whom Ellis met on his hike around the Big Island in 1822. It told of a boat which had no sail but instead a canopy of white tapa containing several white men, landing at Kealakekua Bay. Here the crew disembarked and later went up the mountain, where they lived for a time, eventually departing in their boat. Other traditions persist including that of a Spanish shipwreck on Maui's shore. "Be that as it may," * Cook was the first navigator to make known to Europe the existence of the Hawaiian group.

The Fateful Contact

The great English explorer, Captain James Cook, had already made two voyages in the Pacific, had explored its furthest reaches, had discovered lands previously unknown to the West, and had charted for the first time islands, bays, rivers, reefs, and coastlines of this greatest of all oceans. On his third, and last, voyage Cook sighted the Hawaiian chain.

Sailing north from the Society Islands in H.M.S. *Resolution,* his flagship, accompanied by H.M.S. *Discovery,* Cook sighted the island of Oahu and then Kauai on January 18, 1778. He believed that this would probably rank as the most important of his many distinguished discoveries in the Pacific.

Cook made landings on Kauai and on Niihau, trading with the natives and replenishing fresh water supplies before continuing his voyage in search of a northwest passage from the Pacific coast of America to the Atlantic.

During the summer of 1778, Cook searched the edge of the Arctic ice without finding a passage. He had the choice of spending the winter of 1778 at the Russian outpost of Petropavlovsk, Kamchatka, finding a haven on the lower part of the American northwest coast, or returning to the Sandwich Islands which he had visited at the beginning of the year.

Cook decided to winter in the Sandwich Islands. His officers and men were exhausted, the ships were in very poor condition, especially the *Resolution* which was leaking badly.

---

* A favorite phrase of Captain Cook which he frequently wrote in his earlier logbooks.

Cook, himself, was tired and looked forward to refreshing his crews and refitting his ships among the Hawaiian people whom he had already recognized as Polynesians.*

He also believed that there were other islands in the chain which remained to be discovered, and he planned further exploration and charting of the islands at which he had so very briefly touched in January. To winter in the Sandwich Islands was a logical decision. It was also a fateful one.

The Mowee Landfall, November 26-30, 1778

Passing through some of the worst storms encountered during any of his voyages, Cook steered for the Sandwich Islands. During a storm on November second the two ships lost sight of each other, and the *Resolution* had to lie to. When rejoined by the *Discovery,* Captain Charles Clerke reported to Cook that the main tack on the *Discovery* had fallen, killing one man and injuring two or three others.

The weather improved. Then, one last northerly gale on November 19 tore the *Resolution*'s main-topsail, just repaired, to pieces. The temperature rose steadily as they steered first east and then south, "the men sitting on deck sewing old sails, putting old rigging into order, and working up junk:** the stores were aired, the carpenters repaired the boats; all, no doubt, thought of joys to come." They remembered the alluring views of Kauai glimpsed in January and the pleasant Polynesian people encountered there.

---

* From 1768, when Cook first sailed to Tahiti, the Polynesian islanders, referred to in the eighteenth century as "Indians of the South Seas," became his friends and a very real part of his life. (From Barrow, *Capt. Cook in Hawaii,* 1976.)

** Junk is remnants of old cable, cut up to make points, mats, gaskets, sennit, etc. on board ship.

It was November 25, 1778. That morning the latitude of Cook's ships put him a degree south of his Kauai anchorage at Waimea Bay, while his longitude was about four degrees to the east. At daybreak, November 26, 1778, Maui was seen for the first time by Europeans.

Captain Cook wrote in the logbook of H.M.S. *Resolution:*

> In the evening, we joined; and at midnight brought to. At daybreak, next morning, land was seen extending from South South East to West. We made sail, and stood for it. At eight, it extended from South East half South, to West; the nearest part two leagues distant. It was supposed that we saw the extent of the land to the East, but not to the West. We were now satisfied, that the group of the Sandwich Islands had been only imperfectly discovered; as those of them which we had visited in our progress Northward, all lie to the leeward of our present station.
>
> In the country was an elevated saddle hill, whose summit appeared above the clouds. From this hill, the land fell in a gentle slope, and terminated in a steep rocky coast, against which the sea broke in a dreadful surf. Finding that we could not weather the island, I bore up, and ranged along the coast to the Westward. It was not long before we saw people on several parts of the shore, and some houses and plantations. The country seemed to be both well wooded and watered; and running streams were seen falling into the sea in various places.

Cook's position that first day was approximately three miles off Kahului. Trading began at once as several hundred persons came out in canoes (Cook observed "five or six hundred persons," some of them swimming alongside).

On the second day off Maui, November 27, Cook wrote at length recording the ships' movements, the trade with the people, and the first sighting of the island of Molokai:

> Seeing some canoes coming off to us, I brought to. As soon as they got along-side, many of the people, who conducted them, came into the ship, without the least hesitation. We found them to be of

> the same nation with the inhabitants of the islands more to leeward, which we had already visited; and, if we did not mistake them, they knew of our having been there. Indeed, it rather appeared too evident; for these people had got amongst them the venereal distemper; and, as yet, I knew of no other way of its reaching them, but by an intercourse with their neighbours since our leaving them.
>
> We got from our visitors a quantity of cuttle-fish, for nails and pieces of iron. They brought very little fruit and roots; but told us that they had plenty of them on their island, as also hogs and fowls. In the evening, the horizon being clear to the Westward, we judged the Westernmost land in sight to be an island,* separated from that off which we now were. Having no doubt that the people would return to the ships next day, with the produce of their country, I kept plying off all night, and in the morning stood close in shore. At first, only a few of the natives visited us; but toward noon, we had the company of a good many, who brought with them bread-fruit, potatoes, tarro, or eddy roots, a few plantains, and small pigs; all of which they exchanged for nails and iron tools.

The Captain had already published three basic regulations for the conduct of his crew. Private trade with the local people was forbidden. This was an old, familiar rule and was necessary for the ships' provisioning and also because the articles which the ships now possessed for trade were in very short supply.

The second regulation was a new one. Cook ordered that no firearms whatever be carried out of the ship, either by officers or men, and that care be taken to keep the natives ignorant of the method of charging "such as we may be under a necessity to make use of."

The third order treated of disease. It was well known that Unalaska had been a great encouragement to "the Venereal"; some days before, all the men had been examined by the surgeons; the complaints remained. Cook was specific: ". . . in order to prevent as much as possible the communicating this fatal disease to a set of innocent people," no woman was to be admitted on any pretense to the ship without the Captain's permission; any man party to such an entry would be punished; any man having the disease or under suspicion of having it, who lay with a woman, would be severely punished; no suspected person would be allowed on shore on any pretense whatever.

---

* It was the island of Molokai.

After reading out these orders to his assembled crew, Cook made what Lieutenant James King called "a sensible speech" reinforcing them. He had taken the same precautions in January at Kauai, yet now among the first people to come aboard from Maui, Cook found melancholy evidence that his efforts there had been unsuccessful. "Or could it be that, after all, in the islands of the Pacific Ocean there were original roots of the malady? Some men tried to make themselves believe so. Cook did not. The island women certainly seemed to carry no fear in their handsome bosoms; repulsed from the ships, they were highly indignant, and the words they shouted were unambiguously words of abuse."

The villagers came out to look and touch the "floating heiaus," to marvel at the abundance of iron, and to bargain. They were excited but friendly, and they seemed to understand the principle of trading very well. Cook observed their honesty and rewarded the occupants of a canoe which rescued the unfortunate cat of the *Resolution.* This ship's cat, an animal unknown to the Hawaiians, fell overboard and was picked up, still alive, astern of Cook's ship. He presented the rescuers with an iron adze, a very valuable item indeed.

The King of Mowee Offers his Aloha

During the day, Cook made no attempt to land but stood close in shore, trading. Ka-hekili was at Wailuku preparing his forces for further battle in case Ka-lani-'opu'u should attack once again. Early in the morning of November 26th, he looked out to sea, astonished at the approach of the tall ships and at first fearful of what they might mean to him and his people. Ka-hekili, however, was not totally unprepared for this event. His brother Ka-'eo was ruling Chief of Kauai and his close ally, and the Maui chief was privy to all the details of Cook's visit to the leeward islands ten months earlier. The King boldly decided to pay an official call.

The royal canoe was prepared, the Maui chiefs assembled and were invited to act as the King's rowers, and offerings were made at the *heiau.* Ka-hekili put on his crested feather helmet and his most splendid royal cloak made of the brilliant feathers of the *i'iwi* and the *mamo,* red and yellow, probably inherited from his father, Ke-kau-like, and handed down to him by his brother who ruled Maui before him.*

The ten chiefs who manned the canoe wore capes of red feathers, as only the highest or ruling chiefs could possess the long cloaks.

As the King's canoe approached, it was seen to be heading for the *Discovery* which at that moment was closer inshore than the *Resolution,* and as it moved out the commoners fell back and may have pretended to look away to avoid the prostration required (or to fulfill it). The officers and men on board the *Discovery* watched fascinated from her decks. One of them, David Samwell, Surgeon's Mate, wrote: "In the afternoon, Kaheekere (Ka-hekili), King of Mowee, and Morotai, came out to *Discovery* with a large train dressed in red feather cloaks. They sang in concert like the Oteihitians." Ka-kekili was received ceremoniously by Captain Charles Clerke and ushered into his cabin where names were exchanged in friendship and reciprocal presents given, among them, the King's cloak.

---

* The cloak may be one of those exhibited in the Cook collections in the British Museum, London, or the Bishop Museum, Honolulu.

Samwell thought the King unprepossessing, though colorful in his regalia, and was curious to observe that his head was tattooed in half circles on one side, his hair cut away on the sides leaving a crest on top. The Samwell journal also mentions seeing two iron skewers or daggers, the sight of which again raised questions in the officers' minds of a possible Spanish visit. In another of the English journals, that of James Burney, a chief with Ka-hekili is described as crossing his fingers when the daggers were observed and pointing toward shore. This caused further speculation that a cross may have been erected there, but no further information was elicited.

Before nightfall, Ka-hekili was carried ashore, and Cook took the ships out to sea during the night, returning the next day to trade for provisions which now began to appear more plentifully. Still making no attempt to land, Cook briefly sought to round Maui's western end, but winds and tides were against him, and he turned eastward along the Hamakua (north) coast of Maui going close inshore by day and standing off again at night.

The Captain sadly realized the impossibility of keeping the seamen and the Hawaiian women apart, and soon the women were coming aboard in large numbers. The trading, too, was opened to private bargaining though the replenishment of ships' stores took precedence.

Cook Meets the Present and Future King

Four days after the visit of Ka-hekili off central Maui, the ships, cruising east, were approached by another important visitor. This royal personage was to welcome Cook officially at Kealakekua Bay many weeks later, but on November 30th he appeared in a large double canoe off Hana (some say it was off Keanae-Wailua) accompanied by his chiefs and retinue, was "handed up the side with great care by his followers, partly because of the feebleness to which he had been reduced by excessive drinking of kava, manifested in his scab-encrusted skin and red-inflamed eyes." Cook noted that he was observant and good natured as he visited the Captain's cabin, and presented Cook with two small pigs; Cook did not know then that this was the ruling chief of another island.

But perhaps the most important visitor was the young chief who was destined to conquer and unite all the islands. Kamehameha came aboard with his uncle, Ka-lani-'opu'u,* with whose permission he spent the night aboard the *Resolution*. Kamehameha was accompanied by other young chiefs, and the aging king, returning to shore, sent back a large double canoe for them which was tied up to the *Resolution*'s stern for the night.

The future king observed the modern weapons with the closest interest. It was his first meeting with westerners and western technology. He observed well, for they were to be of crucial significance in the success of this ambitious and capable chief in establishing a kingdom in Hawaii.

---

* Cook heard his name as "Terreeoboo." It was, of course, none other than Ka-hekili's arch enemy, Ka-lani-'opu'u, still on Maui, still at war, and still hoping to take the rich prize from his brother-in-law and avenge the humiliating defeats suffered in his Maui campaigns.

That last day of November 1778 was an eventful day in the history of Maui and the Islands. Captain Cook and King Ka-lani-'opu'u met for the first of many times, exchanging names and pledging friendship, though neither one of them was quite sure just who the other was. Kamehameha, described by Lieutenant King as about twenty-five years of age and "of savage mien," spent that day and the night aboard the *Resolution,* probably not sleeping but observing with his quick mind everything that was to be seen on board. On that same evening before the sun went down, Cook saw the island of Hawaii, another "first" in his remarkable Pacific discoveries. It was to be his last.*

Kealakekua Bay

As the first day of December 1778 ended, the English ships were close up to the northern side of the island which Cook was told was called "O' why' he' ". The next morning revealed high mountains with snowy summits, pieces of white cloth flying on shore, canoes coming out flying white streamers; Cook flew his ensign in reply. The paddlers of the canoes, at first rather shy, soon understood the possibilities of trade; and by evening

---

* Cook's skilled sailing master in the *Resolution,* still a young man in his early twenties, was William Bligh, who became notorious as Captain Bligh of H.M.S. *Bounty.* Bligh made a sketch, the first known picture of the island of Maui. It is an accurate rendering from four miles off shore and shows the crater rising above the clouds with the West Maui Mountains rising beyond the isthmus. (From the 1784 edition of *Cook's Voyages.*)

Cook had determined to ply further to windward around this island.

The hopes of officers and crew for escaping the long confinement of the ships rose as they drew close in to the new land. But it was to be another seven weeks of cruising off and on; Cook bringing the ships in toward land only when they needed supplies. There was quite a lot of bad weather and once or twice the ships were in danger of going on the rocks.

It was during this long and tiresome search for an anchorage, that Cook for the first and only time came close to facing mutiny. The cause of discontent centered around the Captain's decision to substitute for the crews' daily ration of grog (rum and water) a "strong decoction of sugar-cane beer." Cook had made this from a batch of cane obtained from the Maui people. He judged it to be good and nutritious as well as antiscorbutic. The ships' officers drank it and assured the Captain that it was good and, with an eye to conserving the spirits for the return to the colder shores of the north, Cook ordered the substitution.

The men refused to touch the stuff and demanded their grog. Cook was annoyed, especially when he was handed a "very mutinous letter" of protest from the sailors.*

It was apparently a very tense situation as neither the men nor the officers fully understood the Captain's decision to keep the ships at sea for those long weeks and he did not share his reasons with them.

But the matter blew over and on the evening of December eighteen in a heavy squall followed by a calm the *Resolution* was swept dangerously close to the shore off Cape Kumukahi.

---

* The letter is mentioned by King and others but has never been found.

A breeze came up which barely enabled the ship with all sails set to clear the land. Just at the peak of anxiety ropes gave way and the main topsail and both topgallant sails were rent in two. "It was as narrow an escape as Cook ever had from losing his ship."

After another whole month of cruising around the island of Hawaii, trading for hogs and vegetables as needed, Cook found his anchorage. A bay appeared in the morning of January 15, 1779 and Bligh was sent with a boat from each ship. That same morning no less than a thousand canoes were counted surrounding the ships with perhaps as many as ten thousand people in them or in the water.

"The evening brought back Bligh reporting good anchorage, fresh water, peaceable and friendly people. Cook could defer no longer. Next morning, 17 January, he stood into Kealakekua Bay and anchored, a quarter of a mile from the shore, in 13 fathoms of water."

The first persons of importance to receive Captain Cook were the priests led by the high priest Kao who insisted on putting the Captain through elaborate religious ceremonies at the *heiau* on the shore. Provisioning and repairs went on; an abundance of women flocked on board the ships, and two handsome chiefs, Palea and Kanina cooperated to control the people crowding about the ships and on their decks.

No other civil authority appeared until the 24th of January when a solemn kapu was pronounced over the entire Bay. This kept people in their houses, canoes on shore, and the ships short of vegetables. On the evening of the 25th, a long line of large sailing and paddling canoes came round the north point. King Terreeoboo (Ka-lani-'opu'u) came aboard the *Resolution* for the second time. To Cook's great surprise, he recognized the same tall, emaciated, red-eyed, but amiable king who had visited him off Maui two months earlier.

After visiting, introducing his queen and two young sons, and receiving presents, he retired to his town of Kaawaloa to sleep. The kapu was off the Bay, "and the ladies—'our old Sweethearts', in Samwell's phrase—were restored to their lovers.

A Royal Reception

Ka-lani-'opu'u's formal welcome took place the next day, a splendid water procession consisting of three large double canoes—in the first, the King and his chiefs richly attired in red and yellow feather cloaks and in the second canoe, Kao and the priests escorting four images of the gods made of feather-covered basket work with features of dogs' teeth, eyes of pearl-oyster shell.

They circled the ships, then landed ashore where Cook followed them. On their meeting, the King took off his own feather cloak, threw it round the Captain's shoulders and placed on his head a handsome *mahiole* or crested feather helmet. Into Cook's hand he gave a royal feather standard or *kahili.* At the Captain's feet Ka-lani-'opu'u laid half a dozen more cloaks, a truly regal gift.

The King returned with Cook to dine on the *Resolution* and to receive presents in his turn. These included a complete tool chest, a valuable present in the King's eyes.

The friendliest relations existed between the Hawaiians and their visitors. There were exhibitions of Hawaiian boxing, fireworks ordered by Cook; "A constant exchange of good offices and mutual little acts of friendship obtained among us," Trevenen wrote.

Thus January passed, and the time for departure drew near. On February 4, the ships sailed out of the Bay with an escort of canoes. Despite signs that the visitors had strained the islanders' resources and even "worn out their welcome," there were tears and promises of a return. Cook set out to explore the leeward side of Maui, to further explore the islands seen a year before, and to take on supplies of good water at the old watering place at Kauai. This would be needed as they headed north once more to seek a passage to the Atlantic.

Cook's Death, February 14, 1779

They were back at Kealakekua Bay in a week. After a series of strong gales of Kawaihae, the head of the *Resolution*'s foremast was found to be badly sprung. It would have to be taken out before it could be repaired and return to the Bay was the only viable alternative. Cook gave the order and the ships sailed again into the harbor at Kealakekua, which this time was completely deserted. Terreeoboo had placed a kapu on all traffic in the Bay.

The British missed the excitement of their previous tumultuous welcome but did not sense any great change at first. However, it became clear that a tension existed in the relations with the ordinary Hawaiians although the chiefs and priests and especially the King were as friendly as ever. A series of incidents included several cases of thievery which was unusual and a skirmish over the boat of one of the chiefs with stones flying. The death and burial of one of the seamen below the *heiau* was observed with both Hawaiian and Christian ceremonies. There were indications that the more intimate relations of the visitors and their hosts had led the latter to view these men of

Lono as less than divine and certainly not to be feared any longer.

Work on the mast continued at the *heiau* under the supervision of Lieutenant King and was almost completed when, on the morning of February 14, it was suddenly observed that the big cutter belonging to the *Discovery* had been stolen during the night. Between 6 and 7 A.M. Captain Cook decided that the only way to get this very important and necessary piece of equipment back was to bring Ka-lani-'opu'u on board and hold him hostage until the cutter was returned. This had worked for Cook under similar circumstances on other islands and he set forth to find the King. Meanwhile, he ordered Captain Clerke to see that the Bay was immediately closed off by armed men in the ships' remaining boats.

He took nine of his marines with him and ordered them (for the first time since his arrival) to load their muskets with ball. In his own double-barrelled musket he loaded first small shot, then ball.

Finding Terreeoboo asleep at his village, he wakened him and invited him to visit the flagship. The King, unsuspecting, accepted and his two young boys ran ahead to jump in Cook's boat for another of their almost daily visits to the ships.

As the Captain escorted the King to the boats, a very large crowd collected on the beach (later estimated to be a thousand people). Terreeoboo's queen, the boys' mother, suddenly became agitated, ran to the King and begged him not to go with Cook. The crowd moved in closer, and the marines formed a line at the water's edge facing them. Some of the attendants pushed the King to a sitting position where he remained looking about with utmost confusion.

The Hawaiians were arming themselves with spears and stones, many had daggers, some of them the iron *pahoas* obtained from the English.

Molesworth Phillips, who commanded the marines, was with Cook and observed at that moment "an artful rascal of a priest . . . singing and making a ceremonious offering of a coconut to the Captain and Terreeoboo to divert their attention from the manoeuvres of the surrounding multitude."

At that moment, Cook still had the initiative and there was nothing to stop him and Phillips moving down to the boats and taking off the marines. This they both decided to do and Cook began walking slowly down.

At that moment, news of firing at the other end of the Bay and the resulting death of a popular chief who was in a canoe seeking to break out of the Bay was received by the crowd and spread like wildfire. This news "was enough to carry the crowd over the borderline of excitement into attack."

The next moment, Cook, threatened by one of the mob with a dagger and a stone, fired one barrel, loaded with small shot, at this person. Beaglehole, Cook's most eminent biographer, believed that it was at this moment that "the strained cord of his temper snapped, (and) he lost the initiative."

> The man being protected by his heavy war mat, the shot did not damage—except that it further enraged the Hawaiians. Kalei'opu'u's (sic) young son in the pinnace was frightened and was put ashore; but even then the men in the boats saw no particular reason for alarm. In the next second the wave broke. A chief attempted to stab Phillips, stones were hurled, a marine was knocked down, Cook fired his other barrel, loaded with ball, and killed a man; Phillips fired, there was a general attack, Cook ordered the marines to fire, and the boats joined in unordered. Phillips had time to reload his musket. The overwhelmed marines did not. Cook shouted 'Take to the boats!', an order hardly necessary, as the unfortunate and ill-trained men were already scrambling into the water and towards the pinnace, 'totally

> vanquish'd', as Phillips said. Phillips himself was knocked down by a stone and stabbed in the shoulder, shot his assailant dead and managed to get to the pinnace; and then out of it again to save the life of a drowning man. In all this tumult he lost sight of Cook. The men in the pinnace saw Cook's last moments. He was close to the lava edge waving to the boats to come in when he was hit from behind with a club; while he staggered he was stabbed in the neck, or the shoulder, with one of the iron daggers—a blow which, not in itself fatal, was enough to fell him, strong as he was, face down in the water. There was a great shout, and a rush to hold him under and finish him off with daggers and clubs. The pinnace had gone in as close to the shore as possible to rescue the floundering marines; the launch had not—Williamson, that strange man incomprehensibly mistaking the meaning of Cook's wave, had even moved further out. The overloaded pinnace pulled off, the cutter came round and fired til she was recalled: the *Resolution,* hearing the uproar and the firing, and seeing, whatever might be the meaning of it all, that there was trouble on shore, fired those of her own four-pounders that could be brought to bear. It seems that the crowd had retired somewhat, and there was a space of time enough to reclaim bodies. The men in the boats may have been shocked out of all awareness of this. Leaving the dead, Cook and four marines, where they lay, the boats rowed back in silence to the ships; and the ships fell silent.

In the affray, the ships' cannon had fired into the mob and among the sixteen or seventeen Hawaiians killed were four chiefs, two of them who had been good friends to the ships.

Captain Charles Clerke, who immediately succeeded to command of the expedition, although a sick man himself, showed remarkable level-headedness. Clerke ruled out vengeance which could have led to further disaster but it was not possible to maintain complete control. There was skirmishing around the *heiau* where the mast of the *Resolution* was laid up for repairs. Nevertheless, Lieutenant King succeeded in returning the mast to the ship without further incident. A few guns were fired but there was no assault on the canoes and some trading was resumed. Women continued to come out to the ships or to remain on board overnight.

To try to get back the bodies of Cook and the four marines, King and Burney were sent ashore in the boats. The people discarded their weapons when they saw that the English carried a flag of truce. The old priest Kao swam out and informed Clerke that the body of Cook had been carried up the cliff side and gave some hints as to what the chiefs had done with the body.

Under pressure from Captain Clerke and the English officers, the remains of their Captain were finally returned. He had been given the treatment accorded the highest chiefs of Hawaii, his flesh stripped from the bones and burned, the hands and feet preserved with salt. Ka-lani-'opu'u had the bones although it is clear that he, the good friend of Cook, was not implicated in his death.

After some delay, the bones, including the skull,* and the feet and hands, were delivered to Captain Clerke in a bundle wrapped in a black and white feather cloak. The hands were recognized as Cook's by the deep scar on his right hand which he had suffered from an exploding powder-horn on the Newfoundland coast.

The remains were put in a coffin and late in the day of February 21, 1779 "amid all the marks of naval grief, flags at half mast, crossed yards and half-minute guns, they were sunk in the waters of the bay."

Ka-lani-'opu'u sent one of his young sons aboard with pres-

*** Several sources have recorded the tradition among the Hawaiians which says that Kamehameha kept Cook's hair. The scalp with the ears attached, but the hair cut off, was returned with the other remains.**

ents to make peace and to collect a red and green cloak promised to him before Cook's death.

Two hundred years after Cook made known the Hawaiian Islands to the western world little is known of what the reactions of the Hawaiians were to that first experience. In the absence of written records, it is difficult, if not impossible, to know what the Hawaiians thought. Evidences of the disease were palpable, yet, for many decades after, Cook was revered by the Hawaiians. Records were compiled from oral sources long years after the events and, as Hawaii became more deeply involved in the turmoil of war, a spiritual, cultural, and social decline took place which was in part a result of influences introduced during and after the first fateful contact which led to the opening of the islands to the outside world.

The Voyage Continues

The departure on February 22nd from Kealakekua was accompanied by deep gloom not only among Cook's men but among the Hawaiians who would long remember him. Clerke followed the original plan, visiting other islands, seeking more water and sea stores, and settling the positions of the islands between Hawaii and Kauai. Lieutenant John Gore took Clerke's place as Commander of the *Discovery* and second in command of the expedition.

Clerke intended to explore Maui further, but adverse winds were encountered. Cruising along the dry and uninviting coast of Kaho'olawe, he moved again toward the Maui shore, finally coming close in to Lahaina, where Thursday, February 25th was spent tacking off and on and trading with the canoes which came out to the ships. Intermittent winds and calms prevented a landing, and the course was set around Lanai, then northward to pass close to the eastern tip of Molokai, where plantations were seen and six or eight canoes came off, though none of them had anything to trade, and the men were described as "very far removed from the ali'i." Samwell reported "many sharks about; we killed three or four."

By February 27, Clerke was noting the steep ridges and valleys of windward Oahu, and February 28 the *Resolution* and *Discovery* came to anchor in Waimea Bay on Oahu's north shore. Here, seven Hawaiian girls from Kealakekua were put ashore reluctantly. Samwell wrote "they were well pleased with their position aboard ship and would willingly (have gone) with us to England." When Clerke landed, he was greeted by a vast number of natives who prostrated themselves. He motioned them to rise. A chief came forward offering a hog, and brisk trading began. Taro, hogs, and other provisions were traded, but, the water proving brackish, Clerke decided to continue on to Kauai. The Captain and his landing party from the *Resolution* were the first known foreigners to set foot on the island of Oahu.

At first, the Cook expedition was not well received on this second visit at Kauai, and it was learned at once by Lieutenant King, who led the first party ashore, that news of Cook's death had already reached there. Skirmishes over water casks and muskets snatched from the marines led to Lieutenant King's shooting a man in self defense. Nevertheless, communication continued, and those trading about the ships were friendly.

The whole atmosphere changed when the High Chiefess of Kauai came aboard with her consort. This was none other than Ka-'eo, the chief from Maui, Ka-hekili's brother. It was his son, Ka-umu-ali'i, the "gentle king" who welcomed the first missionaries to Kauai many years later. The ruling chiefess proved to be a generous friend, sending a canoe-load of presents to Clerke after he had left Kauai for Niihau to obtain a supply of yams. A second canoe-load of fine Kauai hogs arrived from the bountiful Queen Ka-maka-helei.

Finally, on March 15, a month after their Commander's death at Kealakekua Bay, Clerke turned the ships north. Gloom fell over the men at the remembrance of their Captain's loss and at the prospect of once again facing the rigors of the icy Arctic seas. As the lovely islands receded into the distance, Captain Clerke read them the Articles of War.

The Kamchatka Peninsula was sighted on April twenty-third and, at the harbor of St. Peter and Paul (Petropavlovsk), they were cordially received by the Russians. Clerke asked them to deliver a letter to England by the long overland route. This letter actually reached the Admiralty with the news of the disaster at Kealakekua Bay eight months before the voyage ended.

Captain Clerke pushed the ships through dense fog and thick ice floes in one last attempt to find a northwest passage. Further attempts were hopeless, and conscious of his own approaching death, he turned back fifteen miles from the point which Cook had reached the year before.

Only a few weeks later, in August 1779, the brave Clerke died and was buried at Petropavlovsk. John Gore took command of the *Resolution* and James King took over the *Discovery.* Gore headed for the Japanese coast hoping to survey as much of it as possible but gale winds split the worn-out sails and snapped the rotten cordage.

The European settlement of Macao was reached on December 1, 1779. Here, the crews turned a handsome profit trading the furs they had on board to the Chinese who eagerly bought them. This was a portent, for the fur trade between North America and China would soon become important.

Though the war of England with the American colonies was in progress, French and American ships had been ordered not to molest the Cook expedition. The long voyage home took most of the year 1780. Gore brought the ships via the Cape of Good Hope into the Atlantic at last and, on October 6, 1780 came to anchor at Deptford. The voyage had lasted four years two months and twenty-two days.

Cook's Achievement

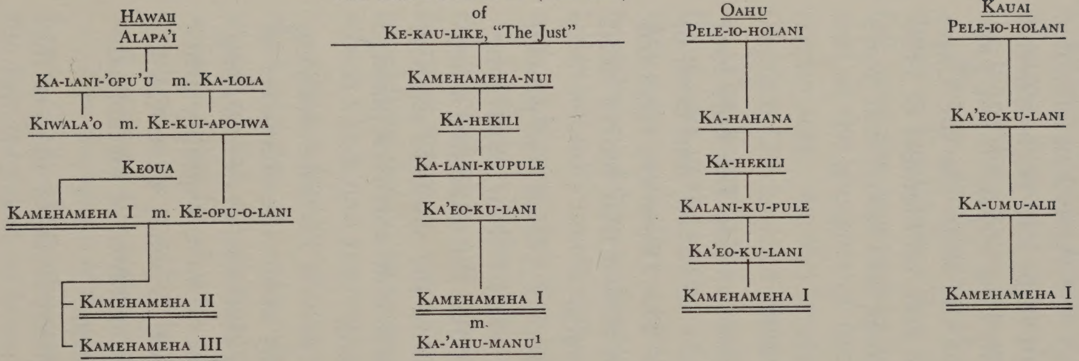
During that long voyage, the *Resolution* had lost only four men from illness; three of them, Clerke included, had been in poor health when the voyage began. The *Discovery* returned with her crew intact. . . . Cook had shown that scurvy need not be a major problem on long voyages.

In eleven years of geographical discovery, Cook had proved that the Pacific was more vast and varied than most geographers had imagined. He had shown that the unknown southern continent, if it existed, lay too far to the south to support life. He proved that there was no practicable northern passage through which ships of trade might sail.

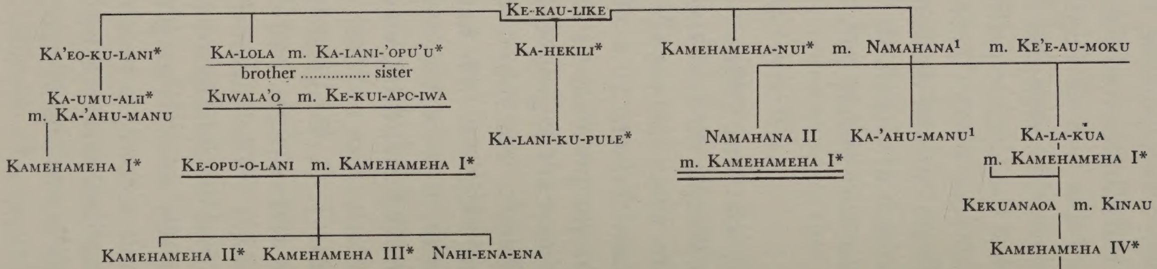
Professor J. C. Beaglehole, who spent a lifetime studying Cook's life and voyages, had this to say about the character of his leadership: "The humanity that is kindness, understanding, tolerance, and wisdom in the treatment of men, a quality practiced naturally as well as planned for, is what gave Cook's voyages their success, as much as the soundness of his seamanship and the brilliance of his navigation."

His legacy was knowledge; his monument is the map of the Pacific.

THE MAUI DYNASTY (1700-1800)


of
Ke-kau-like, "The Just"
Kamehameha-nui
Ka-hekili
Ka-lani-kupule
Ka’eo-ku-lani
Kamehameha I
m.
Ka-’ahu-manu¹
Hawaii
Alapa’i
Ka-lani-’opu’u m. Ka-lola
Kiwala’o m. Ke-kui-apo-iwa
Keoua
Kamehameha I m. Ke-opu-o-lani
Kamehameha II
Kamehameha III
Oahu
Pele-io-holani
Ka-hahana
Ka-hekili
Kalani-ku-pule
Ka’eo-ku-lani
Kamehameha I
Kauai
Pele-io-holani
Ka’eo-ku-lani
Ka-umu-alii
Kamehameha I

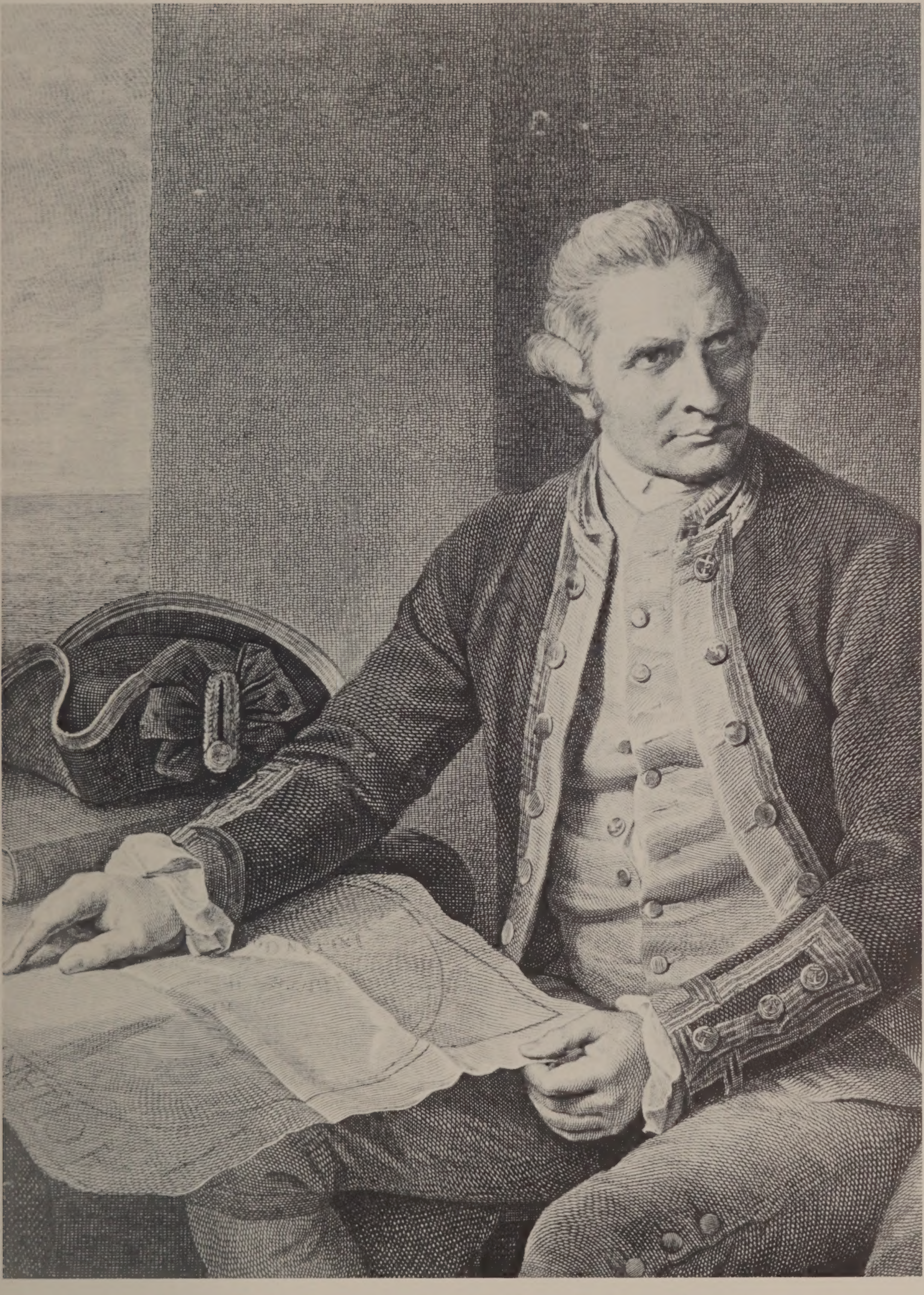
THE MAUI DYNASTY BLOOD LINES


Ke-kau-like
Ka’eo-ku-lani*
Ka-umu-alii*
m. Ka-’ahu-manu
Kamehameha I*
Ka-lola m. Ka-lani-’opu’u*
brother .... sister
Kiwala’o m. Ke-kui-apc-iwa
Ke-opu-o-lani m. Kamehameha I*
Kamehameha II*
Kamehameha III*
Nahi-ena-ena
Ka-hekili*
Ka-lani-ku-pule*
Kamehameha-nui* m. Namahana¹ m. Ke’e-au-moku
Namahana II
m. Kamehameha I*
Ka-’ahu-manu¹
Ka-la-kua
m. Kamehameha I*
Kekuanaoa m. Kinau
Kamehameha IV*
Kamehameha V*

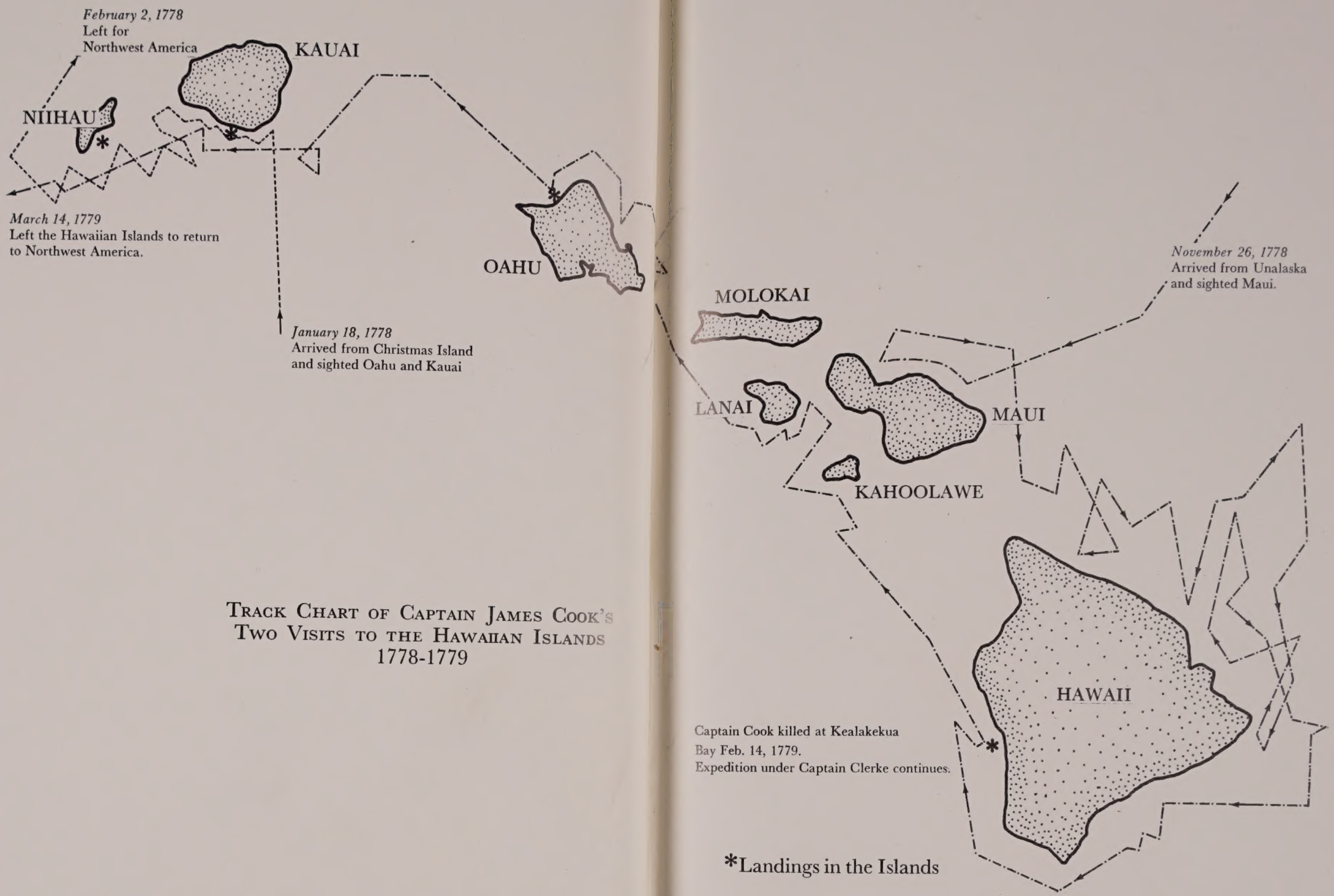
**Ruling Chiefs or Kings*

---

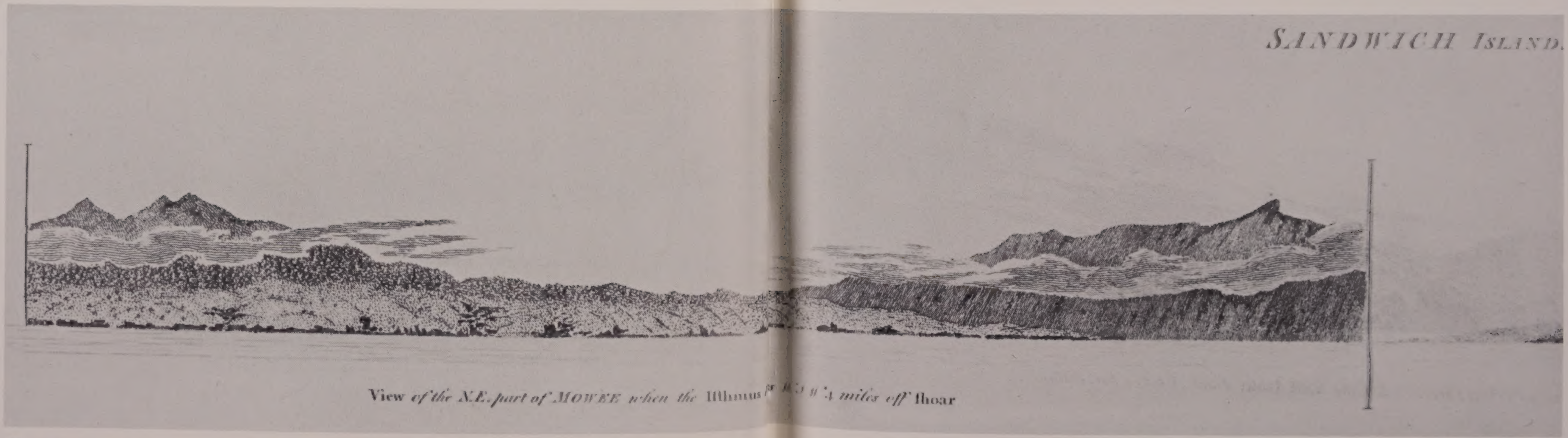
[1] Ka-’ahu-manu’s power as Favorite Wife, Premier *kuhina nui,* and Regent had a strong base in her Maui connections. After Kamehameha died, she virtually ruled the kingdom which she finally united by her marriage to her cousin, Ka-umu-alii, the king of Kauai. After the death of her uncle, Ka-hekili, she became the heiress of the Maui dynasty and fully consolidated her rule by appointing her brothers, nephews, nieces, and cousins of the Maui line to influential positions.



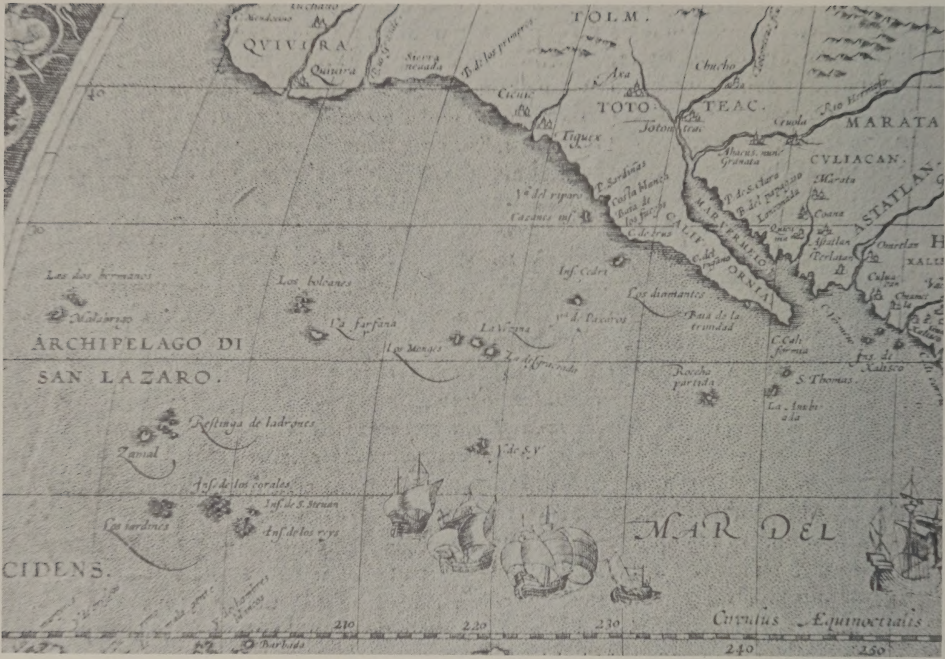
Captain James Cook. Engraving by J.K. Sherwin, after the oil portrait by Nathaniel Dance, London, 1784. *Peabody Museum of Salem.*


February 2, 1778
Left for
Northwest America
KAUAI
NIIHAU
March 14, 1779
Left the Hawaiian Islands to return
to Northwest America.
January 18, 1778
Arrived from Christmas Island
and sighted Oahu and Kauai
OAHU
MOLOKAI
LANAI
MAUI
KAHOOLAWE
HAWAII
November 26, 1778
Arrived from Unalaska
and sighted Maui.
Captain Cook killed at Kealakekua
Bay Feb. 14, 1779.
Expedition under Captain Clerke continues.
*Landings in the Islands

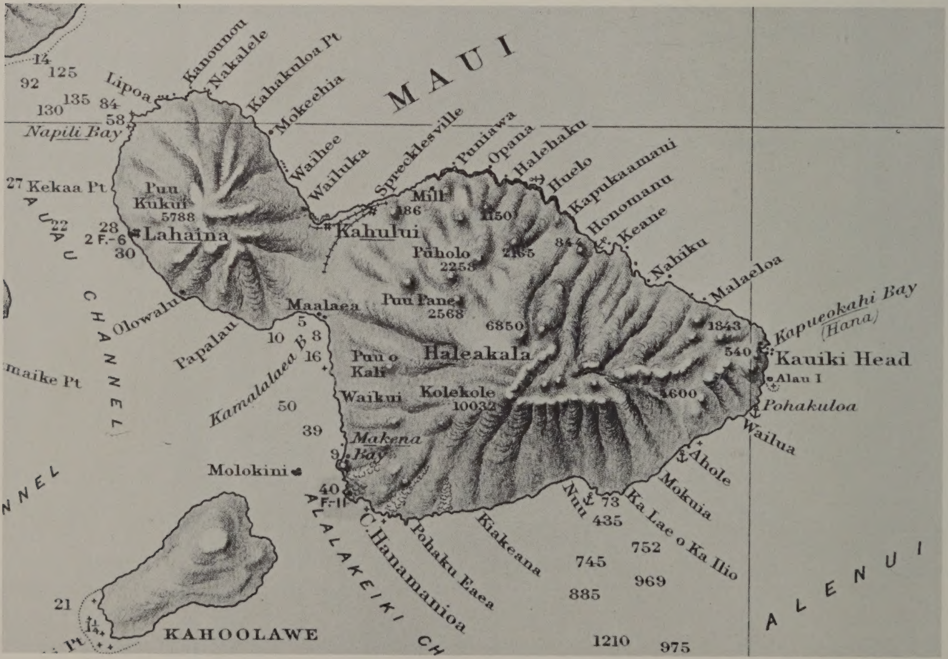
TRACK CHART OF CAPTAIN JAMES COOK'S
TWO VISITS TO THE HAWAIIAN ISLANDS
1778-1779


SANDWICH ISLAND.
View of the N.E. part of MOWEE when the Isthmus … 4 miles off shoar

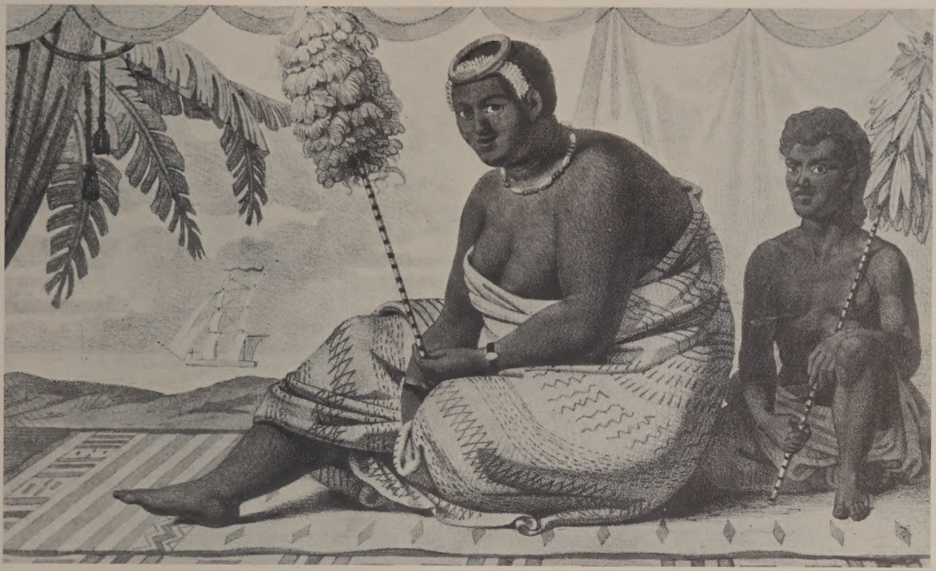
The first known picture of Maui is this engraving from a sketch by the sailing master of Captain Cook's flagship, the twenty-one-year-old William Bligh, later the famous captain of H.M.S. *Bounty*. From *Cook's Voyages*, Vol. II (London, 1785). *Peabody Museum of Salem.*


QVIVIRA
Quiuira
Sierra neuada
TOLM.
TOTO
TEAC
MARATA
CVLIACAN
ASTATLAN
CALIFORNIA
MAR VERMEIO
Los dos hermanos
Los bolcanes
La Farfana
Los Monges
Los diamantes
Rocha partida
S. Thomas
ARCHIPELAGO DI SAN LAZARO.
Restinga de ladrones
Zanial
Inf. de los corales
Los sardines
Inf. de los reys
MAR DEL
CIDENS.
Circulus Æquinoctialis
Barbada
210
220
230
240
250

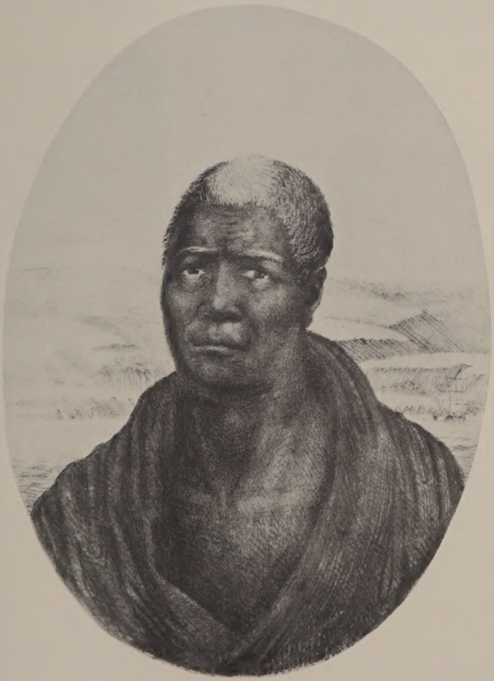
A Spanish map, dated 1587, shows islands near the twentieth parallel, which might indicate the windward islands of Hawaii. *Courtesy of Darrell Nielson, Maui.*


MAUI
Napili Bay
Lipoa
Kanounou
Nakalele
Kahakuloa Pt
Mokeehia
Waihee
Wailuka
Spreckelsville
Puniawa
Opana
Halehaku
Huelo
Kapukaamaui
Honomanu
Keane
Nahiku
Malaeloa
Kapueokahi Bay (Hana)
Kauiki Head
Alau I
Pohakuloa
Wailua
Ahole
Mokuia
Ka Lae o Ka Ilio
Nuu
Kiakeana
Pohaku Eaea
C. Hanamanioa
ALALAKEIKI CH
ALENUI
Kekaa Pt
Puu Kukui 5788
Lahaina
Olowalu
Papalau
Kamalalaea B
Maalaea
Kahului
Mill
Puholo 2253
Puu Pane 2568
Haleakala
Puu o Kali
Waikui
Kolekole 10032
Makena Bay
Molokini
KAHOOLAWE
AUAU CHANNEL

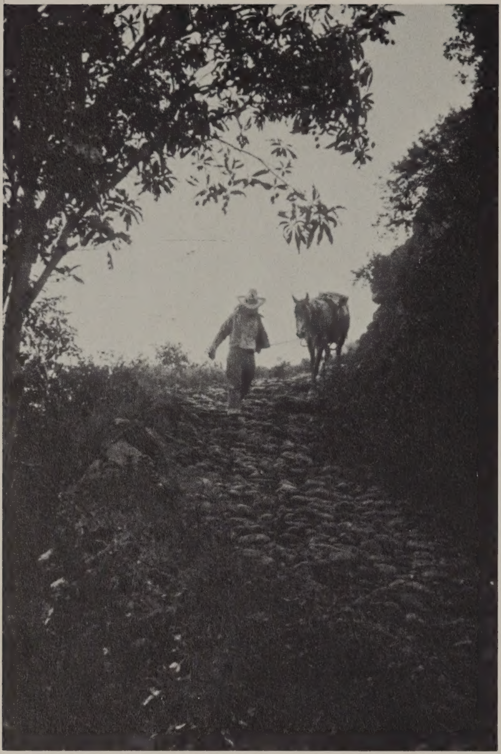
Topographical map of Maui. From the U.S. Hydrographic Office chart 1368 (Washington, D.C., 1893). *Peabody Museum of Salem.*



The heiress of the Maui Dynasty and Favorite Wife, Ka-'ahu-manu, in 1816 when she was forty-seven. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

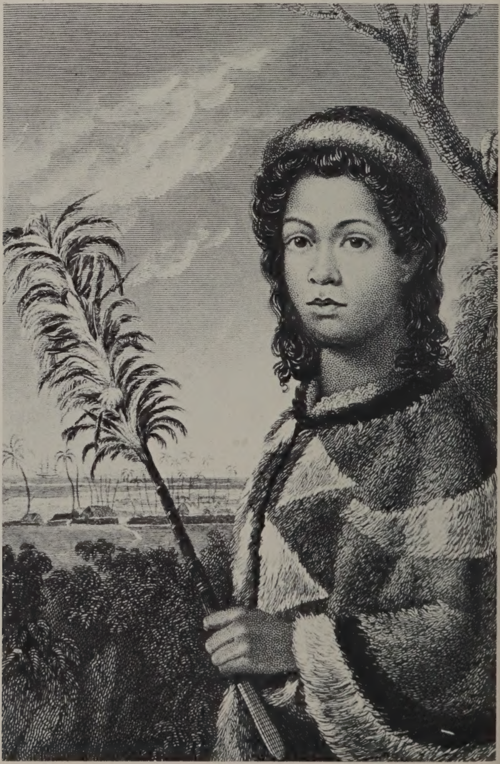


Kamehameha the Great, 1816. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

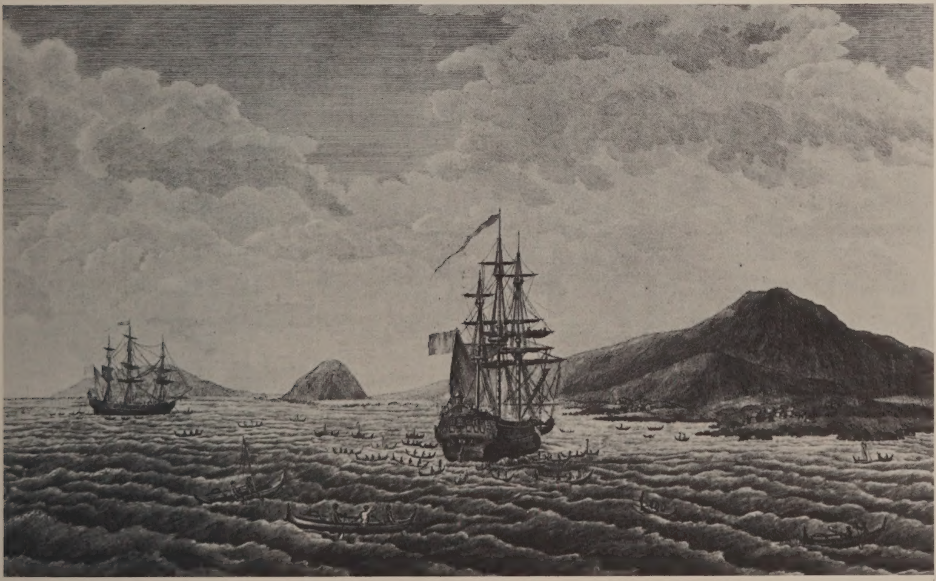


A section of the original Pi'ilani Highway, 1917. *Courtesy of Inez Ashdown.*

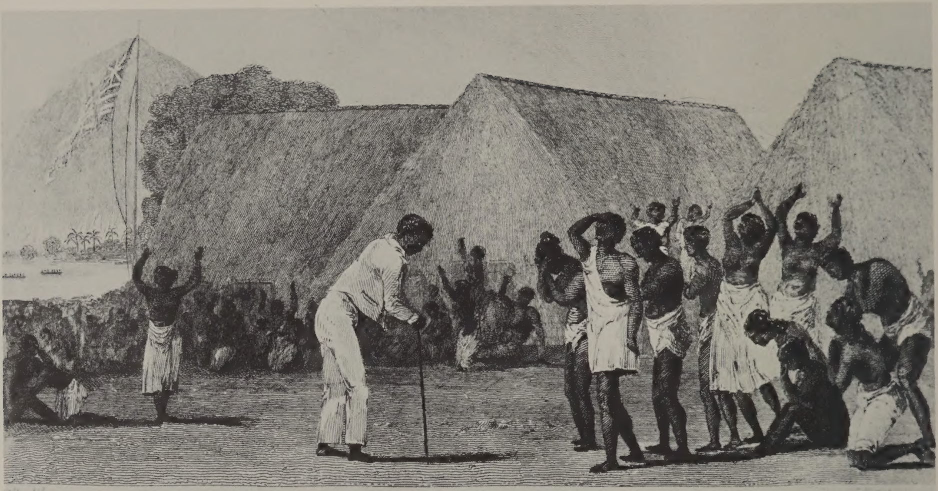
Nahi-'ena-'ena, the princess who loved her brother, the King. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



The Iao Valley, scene of the final battle for the possession of Maui. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



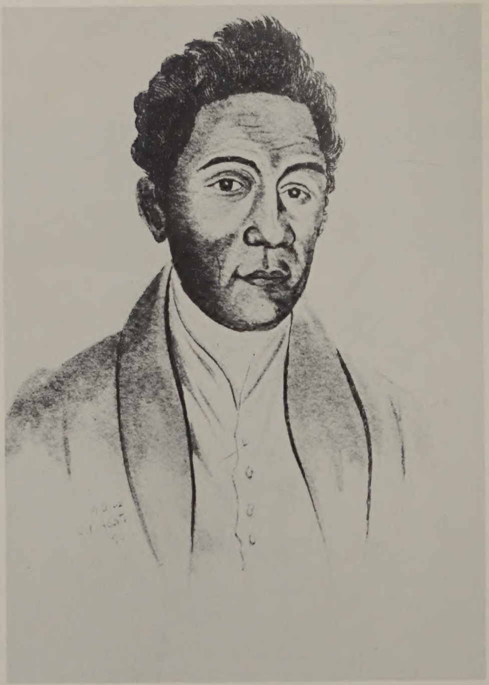
Ships of the French expedition of La Pérouse off Maui, May 30, 1786. *Peabody Museum of Salem.*



Lamentation on the Death of Queen Keopuolani.

Published by Fisher Son & Cº Caxton London April 1828.

Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.



The Hawaiian missionary and historian, David Malo. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

4

THE FINAL BATTLES: 1780-1794

In which the struggle is renewed with modern weapons, the final battles of the Hundred Years' War are fought, and Kamehameha conquers all and establishes a united island kingdom.

> Cook gave the chiefs their first sight of weapons that might transform war and turn an enterprising alii into a king. *Gavan Daws,* Shoal of Time.

As contacts increased, the demand for weapons by the chiefs became insistent. They did not have to wait long to get them. Cook's discoveries had led to the opening of a new trade in furs with the northwest coast of America. Ships plying between there and China began to stop at the Islands for rendezvous and refreshment between voyages.

The intense bargaining for guns began, often accompanied by violence on both sides. "Many of the Hawaiians were marked with venereal sores, and they made it clear that their delight in owning a gun would be doubled if they could get one by killing a white man," and some of the white traders saw nothing wrong in arming one Hawaiian chief against another. Sometimes guns were sold to several factions who were then encouraged to shoot each other. Others sold defective gunpowder or guns that took their toll in injuries or deaths. The majority of the captains, however, traded fairly with the Hawaiians, maintaining friendly and mutually profitable relations.

Nevertheless, the demand for guns became more intense, and ships came in increasing numbers. For several seasons on the west coast of Hawaii, the chiefs refused to sell hogs unless they were paid for in arms. A good example of the demand is found in the journals of Captain George Vancouver, the English captain who became Kamehameha's friend and advisor. Vancouver refused to sell arms to the chiefs, to their great disappointment. Yet, he did help Kamehameha to build a more formidable weapon of war than guns or cannon: a ship; the first ship to be built in Hawaii. She was christened the *Britannia* and took part in the last phases of the war.

As possession of guns and iron weapons increased, the whole nature of Hawaiian warfare changed. The relations between the Hawaiians and the haoles changed at the same time. Sometimes anchors and boats were stolen with the idea that they could be ransomed for guns and ammunition or kept so that their iron could be turned into hand weapons and tools.

Cables were cut, copper removed from ships' bottoms, and boats disappeared in the night. When the haole captains complained, the chiefs were blamed, and they, in turn, blamed one another. "Ka-hekili was a master of ambiguity, and on Hawaii, Kamehameha and the dashing chief, Kaiana, raised evasion and contradiction to a high art."

The traffic in arms continued to grow, and between 1785 and 1794 it is estimated that as many as thirty-five English ships and "at least fifteen American ships called at Hawaii . . . yet, despite the violence, most ships were able to fill their water casks and salt down their hogs without trouble."

The Olowalu Massacre

Into these troubled waters an American ship named the *Eleanora* appeared in 1790. She was a merchantman in the fur trade commanded by Captain Simon Metcalf. At the end of January she anchored off Honua'ula, the village observed four years earlier by La Pérouse on his visit to Maui. While bartering there for provisions, the ship's boat, tied astern, was stolen during the night, and the sailor guarding the boat was slain. The boat was taken ashore and burned for its fittings of iron.

This incident resulted in the cruel massacre at Olowalu, Maui, which had indirect but important effects on the wars of the chiefs. Many descriptions of the massacre exist, one of the contemporary accounts having been published in the *Columbian Sentinel*, a newspaper of Boston in 1791. John Young, boatswain of the *Eleanora*, gave a full account to Vancouver, which he published in his *Journal*. Still another account is found in the logbook of the whale ship *Massachusetts*, now in the Library of the Peabody Museum of Salem.

When Metcalf discovered the loss of his boat and his crewman, he was in an evil mood. He turned out all the women aboard the *Eleanora* and then fired on a trading canoe, killing or wounding several Hawaiians. A man was caught swimming underneath the ship. Metcalf wanted to hang this man but gave in to the strong objections of his officers. Instead, he bombarded the villages with grapeshot, then sent men to set fire to the huts and the *heiau*.

Metcalf then sailed along the shore toward the village of Olowalu suspecting that the men who had brought hogs from there were responsible for the theft of the boat and the murder of the watchman. Next morning the High Chiefess Ka-lola* declared a tabu restricting canoes from approaching the *Eleanora*. Those who disobeyed were threatened with death by burning. Ka-lola alone among Hawaiian chiefs possessed this power, called the "burning kapu" or *mau'umae*, meaning "withered grass." The tabu lasted three days, but on the fourth day canoes went forth in great numbers to trade with the foreigners, now anchored off Olowalu.

The chief Ka-'opu-iki, husband of Ka-lolas, came aboard offering to return the boat and the missing sailor. Metcalf promised a rich reward for their return. The chief returned bringing only a piece of the boat's keel and a pair of stripped thighbones, claiming the reward.

The officers, now incensed themselves, suggested hanging a few chiefs from the yardarm, but Metcalf prepared a more terrible revenge. Be it said that his officers did try to dissuade him, but he then encouraged the trading canoes to come out to the *Eleanora*, and, when a large number had gathered, he shunted them, all unsuspecting, to the ship's starboard side.

Ordering his gundeck ports opened and the swivel and brass guns on deck manned, he gave the order to fire.

"Within minutes, the sea was red with blood. . . . Metcalf weighed anchor and sailed for the island of Hawaii, leaving the natives to drag for their dead with fishhooks." At least a hundred innocent natives were killed and more than a hundred wounded. Dozens of bodies were never found.

---

* This was the same chiefess, sister of Ka-hekili, who had been "sacred wife" to King Ka-lani-'opu'u before his death. At the time of the massacre, she was living at Olowalu with her second husband, the chief Ka-'opu-iki.

"The dead were heaped on the sands at Olowalu. . . . The battle was called Kalolopahu, 'the spilled brains.' Wives, children, parents, and friends came to mourn over their dead; and the sound of loud wailing arose."

The *Eleanora* sailed away to Hawaii seeking a rendezvous with another ship belonging to Metcalf. This was the *Fair American*, a small sloop commanded by Metcalf's son, Thomas. The *Fair American* had become separated from the *Eleanora* on the northwest coast of America and at the time of the massacre on Maui was searching for the elder Metcalf's ship along the western coast of Hawaii.

The High Chief, Ka-me'e-ia-moku, ally of Kamehameha, seeing the *Fair American* cruising the coast near his district, decided to kill the crew and capture the ship. This powerful chief had been insulted by Simon Metcalf on an earlier occasion when he was struck with a rope as he sought to board the *Eleanora*. Ka-me'e-ia-moku swore revenge upon the next ship that appeared and, seeing a chance to secure a fine vessel with all its equipment, boarded the sloop with his men, who killed four of the crew, including young Metcalf.

One man, Isaac Davis, escaped with his life when a more merciful chief intervened. Davis was taken ashore to be held prisoner of Kamehameha. At the same time, the *Eleanora* put in at Kealakekua Bay where Metcalf allowed one man to go ashore. This man was the Englishman John Young whom Kamehameha also held against his will, fearing that if Young returned to the *Eleanora*, Metcalf would learn of the fate of his son and the *Fair American* and take revenge on the Hawaiians.

Metcalf never found out what happened and was killed, along with another son, some years later by Indians on the northwest American coast.

Young and Davis became the companions and advisers (and gunners) to Kamehameha. The *Fair American* was a welcome addition to Kamehameha's war machine. She was stripped of her guns, including a small cannon which was christened Lopaka, an Hawaiian version of the name Robert. The sloop was then completely refitted and played an important part in subsequent battles.

Isaac Davis and John Young tried unsuccessfully to escape but eventually became reconciled to their fate and settled with Hawaiian wives on lands granted by the King in their adopted country. The granddaughter of John Young became the Hawaiian Queen Emma, wife of Kamehameha IV.

War of the Hawaiian Succession

After the dramatic advent and departure of the Cook expedition and the end of the Makahiki season, there was a brief lull. Then the wars of the ruling chiefs were resumed. Ka-lani-'opu'u, who had spent a lifetime at war against Maui, never quite conquering the island, spent his last years drinking kawa and enjoying his favorite entertainment, the hula dancing in which the old King himself would often join. Ka-lani-'opu'u died in 1781 or 1782. Before his death, he had designated his highborn son, Kiwala'o, as his heir. At the same time, he designated his nephew, Kamehameha, as guardian of the war god, Ku-'ka'ili-moku.

Ka-hekili, on Maui, hearing of his opponent's death and the struggle for power which ensued between Kamehameha and the sons of Ka-lani-'opu'u, chose this moment to renew the war. Determined to rid Maui of Hawaii's oppression, he set out to reconquer Hana and reunite Maui's eastern end with the Maui kingdom.

The chiefs of Hana, grandsons of the great Hawaiian chief Keawe and related to other chiefs of the Big Island, were loyal to Hawaii. Hearing of Ka-hekili's preparations, they readied themselves for battle.

Ka-hekili divided his forces. One group was marched through the crater of Haleakala by the ancient trail and down the Kaupo gap. The rest of his forces the King sent out of the crater by the Ko'olau Gap. He planned to make a pincers movement on Hana and the fortress rock of Ka'uiki.

As the war dragged on, the defenders were able to hold out against the Maui forces for an entire year. At last, Ka-hekili, learning of the secret sources of water which sustained the besieged fortress, cut off the supply, and the defenders, dying of thirst, were finished off by Ka-hekili's warriors. A few of the chiefs tried to escape by lowering canoes from the steep sides of Ka'uiki. Two of the Hana chiefs escaped, but all the rest—chiefs, warriors, and commoners—were slain. The Hawaiian historian Kamakau, wrote: "Those who were eye-witnesses say there never was a more dreadful slaughter than in this war. At the *heiaus* below Ka'uiki were numerous ovens where the corpses were burned and left to dry in the sun."

In 1782, Ka-hekili, once again ruler in his own island kingdom, retired to cultivate his fertile fields and care for his people.

But Ka-hekili's cultivation of the land was short-lived. It must have been but a respite and preparation for the continuation of his unceasing fight to free Maui from the oppression of the Hawaiian chiefs and to conquer the Big Island.

Now he turned against Kamehameha, sending some of his best fighters across the channel to aid his enemies in the struggle for control of the Big Island kingdom. In the fighting, the warriors of Ka-hekili wounded or killed a number of Kamehameha's best men before withdrawing to Maui, thus winning nothing but the enmity of that chief.

Ka-hekili Conquers Oahu

Ka-hekili, unsuccessful in his thrust against Kamehameha, now turned his attention toward Oahu. The ruling chief of Oahu was Ka-hekili's nephew and foster son, the ally who had sent reinforcements to Ka-hekili when Ka-lani-'opu'u was still on Maui warring against him.

Ka-hekili pretended to support the alliance with the ruling chief, Ka-hahana, but secretly prepared for war. He waited several years, biding his time. Ka-hahana became careless and mistakenly trusted the intentions of his foster father on Maui.

The Oahu chief was living in Nu'uanu Valley above Honolulu when he received the news that Ka-hekili had landed on the beaches with a large fleet of war canoes and was gathering his warriors about him for an attack on the defenders of Oahu.

In January 1783, a decisive battle was fought. Ka-hekili's wife, Kau-wahine, who was also a noted fighter, took part in this battle. ". . . the waters of the stream of Kahe-iki ran red with blood from the heaps of broken corpses that fell into the water." Confusion seized the ranks; the warriors of Ka-hahana were dispersed while he and his wife fled to the forest. Thus, Oahu and Molokai were taken by Ka-hekili. The Oahu chief and his wife lived secretly on Oahu for two and a half years, protected and supported by the people. When they were found, Ka-hekili had them put to death.

But this did not end the carnage. A plot to kill Ka-hekili, who was living at Kailua on Oahu, was discovered to have been organized by the chief of the Ewa district. Ka-hekili sent his troops in and attacked the districts of Kona and Ewa. ". . . men, women and children were massacred. All the Oahu chiefs were killed and the chiefesses tortured." *

Ka-hekili now controlled Oahu, but peace was not to be his. Fighting erupted on his home island of Maui among minor chiefs, while at the same time he learned of the growing threat from Hawaii where Kamehameha had defeated all rivals except the alii Keoua, and had gained control of most of the island kingdom. Ka-hekili's son and designated heir, Ka-lani-ku-pule, was dispatched to Wailuku to prepare for the coming attack. Ka-lani-ku-pule took with him Maui's war leaders and Ka-hekili's best warriors, the battle-scarred veterans of the war on Oahu.

Kamehameha Conquers Maui, 1790

The epic struggle between the forces of Ka-hekili and Kamehameha for hegemony of the islands reached a climax in the battle of Kepaniwai ("The damming of the waters") in Maui's Iao Valley in 1790. Kamehameha was the victor in this bloody fight, the first major battle in which the superiority of western armaments and military tactics played the decisive role. It was by no means the last battle, but it was a decisive defeat for the Maui king, and it effectively removed the Maui kingdom from the path of the conqueror.

In nine years of bloody struggle, Kamehameha had emerged as the most feared and powerful of the warring chiefs in the Islands. As a young warrior, he had first seen the ships, met the first haoles, and had begun to note carefully the sources of their power when Cook's ships lay off Maui in 1778. He was present at Kealakekua Bay during the Cook sojourn there and was often a visitor to the ships where, on one occasion, Nathaniel Portlock, armorer on board H.M.S. *Discovery*, observed Kamehameha trading Captain Clerke a feather cloak for nine iron daggers. Some of the British officers thought they saw him at the death of Cook and were told he was wounded in the bombardment. He was also reported to have possession of Cook's hair, which added to his already powerful *mana* as a fighter chief.

---

* Kamakau described Ka-hekili as especially cruel to his enemies. This is to be doubted as it was customary, even expected in the old style battles of the alii chiefs, that the losers in battle would lose their lives. Ka-hekili was probably no more nor less cruel than the other warring chiefs.

Kamehameha had defeated his three major rivals one by one. Kiwala'o (the heir) was slain at the important battle of Mokuohai. The younger heir, Keoua, had defeated and killed the brother of Ka-lani-'opu'u who controlled the Hilo districts of the island. The struggle for power had narrowed to the cousins, Kamehameha and Keoua. In another battle in 1782, Kamehameha had established himself as the strongest contestant for power on Hawaii without, however, winning a decisive victory.

Four more years of campaigning followed without a final settlement among the contesting chiefs, and in 1786 the threat to the usurper's bid for power came from the direction of Maui.

Ka-hekili, an alii of the older generation of warrior chiefs, had always been strong enough to resist invasion from Hawaii, but by 1786 he had become the most powerful king in the Islands. He now controlled Maui, Molokai, and Lanai and had made himself the conqueror of Oahu, perhaps the richest prize of all.

In addition, Ka-hekili had a working agreement with his brother, Ka-'eo-ku-lani, the ruler of Kauai. By 1790, Ka-hekili had become the greatest threat to Kamehameha's bid for power.

Kamehameha now decided to take the war from Hawaii to Maui and thus convert the internal struggle on Hawaii to a war for higher stakes; i.e., control of all the islands and the establishment of an island kingdom. If he could defeat the powerful ruler of all the islands beyond Hawaii, he could rule supreme.

Kamehameha brought all his forces to the invasion of Maui. He took with him his feather war god, Ku-'ka'ili-moku, the basketwork head with staring shell eyes and the wide grin embellished with dogs' teeth. The feathers "bristled and stood up straight, a good omen."

Kamehameha won the first battle and then, with his full war machine, advanced along the north shore in a huge fleet of canoes. With him were Lopaka the cannon, swivel guns mounted on canoes, and Young and Davis to navigate the *Fair American* and to deploy and fire the artillery. He landed at Kahului where the alii prince, the son of Ka-hekili, was awaiting the attack.

The Maui defenders retreated into the steep Iao Valley. While women and children and old men watched from the hills, Isaac Davis and John Young cannonaded the Maui army into flight. Ka-lani-ku-pule, with most of the Maui chiefs, escaped through the mountains to Olowalu and then Lahaina whence he brought the bad news to his father on Oahu.

Accompanying the prince and the Maui chiefs in their flight were the dowager queen of Hawaii, Ka-lola, and her granddaughter, whose father had been slain by Kamehameha.

This granddaughter, then about eleven, was the sacred and tabu chiefess, Ke-opu-o-lani. The child was carried on the shoulders of her *kahu* (guardian) to Lahaina and from there to Molokai, where Ka-lola and her retinue camped as the queen was too ill to travel further.

Kamehameha sent messengers to Ka-lola on Molokai and beyond to Ka-hekili on Oahu. The message to Ka-lola was the offer of protection of her family and especially of the tabu chiefess, Ke-opu-o-lani. He then sailed for Molokai. Ka-lola, near death, gave the sacred child to Kamehameha.

The message to Ka-hekili was in the form of two stones: one black, the other white. Ka-hekili read the challenge correctly. The white stone meant peace; the black meant war. Ka-hekili told the messengers: "Go back and tell Kamehameha to return to Hawaii and when the black kapa covers Ka-hekili and the black pig rests at his nose, then is the time to cast stones." (The interpretation: "When I die, the kingdom will be yours.") Ka-hekili had no intention of yielding to Kamehameha's pressures and set about at once to put his affairs in order.

Kamehameha was still on Molokai with all his fleet and land forces when word came of rebellion on Hawaii. He returned at once and resumed his war against Keoua, the second son of old Ka-lani-'opu'u, who foolishly had killed his uncle, the chief at Hilo, and was now ravaging the lands of Kamehameha, burning villages and killing his people.

The cousins fought and fought again without decisive victory for either side. Keoua and his army then suffered a setback that was taken as an augury of the disfavor of the gods, especially Pele, the goddess of the volcanoes.

Keoua, after a fierce battle with Kamehameha, had decided to withdraw with his warriors, his retinue, and their families by a path close to the crater of Kilauea. As they passed, an eruption threw a cloud of hot smoke across the sun; hot cinders fell on bare bodies.

Those in the rear of the marching line rushed ahead to find a horrifying sight. Reaching their comrades in the vanguard, "they discovered them all to have become corpses. Some were lying down, and others were sitting upright clasping with dying grasp their wives and children, and joining noses (their form of expressing affection) as in the act of taking a final leave."

In the complicated nine-year struggle for power, this was a blow to Keoua's side, more psychological than material, as both contestants still seemed evenly matched.

Then, Kamehameha began building the great war *heiau* on the hill called Pu'u-kohola ("Hill of the Whale") overlooking Kawaihae Bay. It was dedicated to his war god, Ku-'ka'ili-moku, and from the first was intended for the offering of human sacrifice. "Psychological warfare might succeed where force of arms could not prevail."

Every step of the designing and building was accompanied by special prayers, rituals, and sacrifices. The chiefs themselves were put to work carrying rocks, and thousands of commoners took part in the construction. The "Hill of the Whale" itself carried great *mana* as its lower slope was the site of the ancient Mailekini Heiau.

This act of temple building may have spurred the chiefs of the other islands to make an attack before it was too late. A great fleet was collected which carried the combined forces of Oahu, Maui, Molokai, and Kauai to Waimana Bay near the Waipio Valley off Hawaii's Hamakua coast.

Kamehameha interrupted his temple building to meet the enemy fleet off Waipio. A bloody sea battle ensued, the Battle of the Red-Mouthed Gun (Ke-pa-waha-ula-ula), so called because both sides used guns and cannon.* But Kamehameha once more held the advantage in arms, and his little sloop, the *Fair American,* mounted with two cannon, added to the awful slaughter. The battle was not a clear victory for either side, but it was the end of the power of the invaders who returned to prepare for the coming invasion of their own islands.

The temple was built. For its final dedication the sacrifice of a tabu or very high chief was required. Kamehameha had invited his arch rival, Keoua, to the dedication. Surprisingly, Keoua came willingly, though against the advice of his chiefs and priests. He seemed to have lost all will to continue the struggle . . . his close companions who accompanied him in his canoe also seem to have been resigned to join him in death.

As the young prince landed at the bay of Kawaihae, resplendent in the most ancient and royal of feather cloaks, Keoua was speared by Kamehameha's father-in-law and top war chief, Ke'e-au-moku; twenty-four of his attendants were also slain, and the body of Keoua was carried to Pu'u-kohola and placed in sacrifice on the altar of the war *heiau* of Kamehameha. Keoua's retainers mourned him: "The rain drives down from the cliffs above, the tears for my chief drop down on the heads of the people."

Kamehameha was now lord of Hawaii, having repulsed

---

* Ka-hekili brought to this battle his gunner, his war dogs, and his special group of fighting men called the *Pahupas.* They were tattooed black on one side, like the King. Portlock saw some of these fierce-looking warriors when he visited at Waimea Bay (Oahu) in 1794.

Ka-hekili's combined war fleet and eliminated his remaining rival on Hawaii. Ka-hekili returned to Oahu with his half brother and closest ally, Ka-'eo-ku-lani, chief of Kauai, to nurse his wounds and prepare for the final showdown. During the interval, he did return to Maui for a time where he occasionally exchanged gifts with haole ship captains.

Ka-hekili and Kamehameha never met again. The old chief and King, said to be eighty-seven, died in 1794 on Oahu. His body was treated in the ancient way at the sacred *heiau* at Le'ahi (Diamond Head) and was claimed by his half brothers, the twin guardians of Kamehameha,* who are supposed to have buried his bones secretly in a cave, "perhaps at Kaloko in north Kohala" on Hawaii.

Another war of succession between his heirs soon broke out in open battles, and the empire of the dynasty of Ke-kau-like, the great Maui progenitor, began to fall apart. Maui, Molokai, and Lanai could not resist the conqueror and were reconquered by 1794. Oahu fell in 1795. By 1810, Kauai agreed to Kamehameha's overlordship of that island and his rule of all Hawaii was undisputed.

One more revolt led Kamehameha back to Hawaii where he defeated and sacrified the rebellious chief, then settled back on his home grounds for the next six years. These were years of peace and consolidation during which Kamehameha proved to be as wise an administrator as he had been a bold and successful war lord.

---

* It is an odd fact, yet one confirmed by all the earlier historians, that the guardians of Kamehameha from the time of his birth until their deaths, were the twin sons of Ke-kau-like of Maui and thus the half brothers of Kamehameha's arch enemy, Ka-hekili. These two chiefs remained, through their lives, faithful to Kamehameha and were fully trusted by him. It is believed that these Maui chiefs were sent by their brother, Ka-hekili to protect Kamehameha at the Hawaiian court because he believed that Kamehameha was his own natural son. If this is the case, it would explain why the *kahu(s)* of the conqueror were allowed to claim the body of Ka-hekili from his own sons and take it to the island of Hawaii for burial. The figures standing on either side of the royal coat of arms of Hawaii represent these faithful guardians.

With the help of Ka-'ahu-manu, granddaughter of Ke-kau-like, who became queen, and her brothers and sisters of the Maui dynasty of Ke-kau-like, Kamehameha established a royal line which lasted for a hundred years.

5

FRENCH AND BRITISH ON MAUI: 1786-1796

In which the French and British governments send expeditions to follow up Cook's discoveries; the French make first landing on Maui; the British Captains Portlock and Dixon survey Maui's southeastern shore and visit Ka-hekili; George Vancouver tries to persuade Kamehameha and Ka-hekili to make peace.

The French Landing

Although Cook is credited with being the first westerner to see Maui, he did not attempt to land there. The first explorer from Europe to do so was a Frenchman, Admiral Jean François Galaup, Compte de la Pérouse. Considered second only to Cook, he was the foremost French explorer of the Pacific in the eighteenth century. "Although he spent but a brief time on Maui, the observations La Pérouse consigned to his journal constitute a firsthand document indispensable for the study of the early history of the island."

In March 1786, La Pérouse sailed from Concepción in Chile and visited Easter Island where he found the natives friendly and checked out the observations of Cook. Here, a bold native relieved the Admiral of his finest chapeau. From Easter Island he sailed for Hawaii.

In an interesting note from his journal he wrote: "The men began to catch tuna, which followed the frigates all the way to the Sandwich Islands and provided complete ration for the crews almost every day for a month and a half. This excellent nourishment kept them in the best of health." They were now sailing in unknown seas, following a route parallel to that taken by Captain Cook in 1777.

After seeing various signs that land was near, on May 28, 1786, La Pérouse sighted the snow-capped mountains of Hawaii and, soon afterwards, "the peaks of Maui, not quite so high . . . ." He spent the night tacking, awaiting daybreak to enter the channel between these two islands and to find an anchorage to the leeward of Maui.

It was seven and a half years after Cook's discovery, but *Astrolabe* and *Boussole* were not the first ships to reach Hawaii after Cook. The English ships *King George* and *Queen Charlotte,* under command of Captains Nathaniel Portlock and George Dixon, had sighted Hawaii just four days ahead of the Frenchmen. The English captains, both veterans of Cook's Third Voyage, lingered only two days at Kealakekua, when they weighed anchor to cruise around Maui, Lanai, and Molokai. Thus, they must have been in the same waters though they neither met nor became aware of each other's presence. It is possible that the French and English ships passed within viewing distance during the night.

From the description in his log, it appears that La Pérouse must have entered the Alenuihaha Channel near Hana, for they sighted the western tip of Maui in the distance, then, seeking an anchorage near Molokini, turned south to run along the eastern end—past Hamoa, the lush valleys at Kipahulu and in sight of Kaupo, then the most populous part of East Maui.

La Pérouse wrote vividly in his journal: "At nine in the morning the point of Mowee bore west 15° north. . . . The aspect of the island was delightful, I coasted along its shore at the distance of a league. . . . We beheld water falling in cascades from the mountains and running in streams to the sea after having watered the habitations of the natives, which are so numerous that a space of three or four leagues may be taken for a single village. But all the huts are on the seacoast, and the mountains are so near that the habitable part of the island appeared to be less than half a league in depth.

"To get an idea of what we felt, one has to be a seaman and be reduced, as we were, in a burning climate, to a single bottle of water a day. The trees which crowned the mountains and the verdure of the banana plants that surrounded the habitations produced inexpressible charms to our senses, but the sea beat upon the coast with the utmost violence and kept us in the situation of Tantalus, desiring and devouring with our eyes what was impossible for us to attain."

La Pérouse had decided that a safe anchorage would be found at the islet called Molokini and was determined to reach the haven before nightfall. Hence, he did not shorten sail when the Hawaiians appeared in canoes ready for trade. About 150 canoes swarmed toward the French ships eager to trade their hogs and fruits for pieces of iron.

"Almost all these canoes boarded one or the other of the frigates. But our rate of speed was so great that they filled with water, and the islanders were obliged to let go the rope which we had thrown out to them and swim away. They first hastened after their hogs, which they brought back in their arms, lifted them on their shoulders into their boats, out of which they emptied the water, and cheerfully entering them again, endeavoring by utmost efforts to recover the position they had lost near our frigates, and which had been instantly occupied by others who also met with the same accident. Of these canoes, at least forty were upset and, though the trading between us and these honest Indians was infinitely agreeable to both parties, it was impossible for us to procure more than fifteen hogs and some fruits and we lost the opportunity of bargaining for more than three hundred others."

La Pérouse then describes the canoes as twenty-four-foot outriggers each containing about five men. He had one of them weighed and found it weighed only fifty pounds, remarking on his surprise at the discovery that the islanders can travel up to sixty leagues in them, even in high seas.

He continues his description of the land as seen from the flagship *Boussole*. After passing the fertile valley of Kaupo, the mountains seemed to him to recede into the interior; no more waterfalls were seen; there were fewer trees, and the villages were fewer and further separated. No anchorage was found here, to his disappointment. Moving swiftly along the dry lee shore, he saw the marks of a large lava flow cascading down the sides of the mountain and into the sea.

The *Astrolabe* had already dropped anchor in the shallow bay which was surrounded by black lava rocks. La Pérouse brought the *Boussole* in to within a mile of shore where he anchored in the shelter of a large promontory. The name of La Pérouse Bay perpetuates the memory of his visit.

The anchorage was not secure, and puffs of wind from over the mountain occasioned squalls that caused the ships to drag anchor continually. As the ships were warped in closer to the shore, several small villages were observed. The ship's artist on the *Astrolabe* produced a drawing which shows the Frenchmen at anchor. It is an accurate rendering of the scene exactly as it is today except that the villages are now deserted ruins. One can even find the wells, canoe sheds and low, rock walls which were originally foundations for the grass houses that La Pérouse saw. Thus, the journal of the French Admiral contains the first detailed description by visitors to the land. Although Captain Clerke attempted to chart this side of Maui after Cook's death in February 1779, the ships had been swept along by strong currents, and a landing had not been attempted.

Canoes came out immediately to the ships to barter their hogs and vegetables for iron. La Pérouse would not allow them to come aboard saying that he was taboo (kapu). The Hawaiians understood this very well. However, he wrote: "M. de Langle [the captain of the *Astrolabe*], who had not taken the same precaution, had his decks crowded in an instant with a multitude of Indians. But they were so docile and so apprehensive of giving offence that it was extremely easy to prevail upon them to return to their boats."

The French captain surmised that this method of trading and knowledge of iron came not from the English but were new proofs that islanders had earlier had communications with the Spanish. He buttressed this idea with the theory that the Spanish did not make known their discovery because they wished to keep it from pirates who infested the western seas of America and who might find provisions and a haven there.

La Pérouse spent a calm night at anchor, and early in the morning of May 30, 1786, set off to make his landing on Maui. "At eight in the morning four boats belonging to the two frigates were ready to set off. The first carried twenty armed soldiers, commanded by Pierrevert, one of the lieutenants. M. de Langle and myself with all the gentlemen and officers who were not detained by their duty on board, were in the two others. This preparation did not alarm the natives who since daybreak had been alongside in their canoes.

"About a hundred and twenty persons, men and women, waited for us on the shore. . . the women showed by the most expressive gestures that there was no mark of kindness they were not disposed to confer upon us, and the men in the most respectful attitude endeavored to discover the motive of our visit in order to anticipate our desires. . . . I had no idea of a people so mild and attentive."

The journal of Dr. Rollin, the doctor aboard the *Boussole*, describes the common people whom they met on Maui's south shore. He found them amply provided with all the necessities of life but not as healthy as the Easter Islanders.

"Their average height is about 5 feet 3 inches; they are somewhat less fleshy, and they have coarse features, thick eyebrows, black eyes which without being hard express self-confidence, prominent cheek-bones, slightly widened nostrils, thick lips, a large mouth, and teeth which are somewhat wide but quite fine and straight. Their hair is black and cut in the pattern of a helmet. Worn very long, like the flowing crest of a helmet, their hair is a reddish brown color at the ends. . . . These people paint and tatoo their skin. They pierce their ears and nasal septa, and adorn themselves with rings inserted in these parts.

"The inhabitants in general however are mild and engaging in their behavior, and even show toward strangers a degree of politeness. . . . The dress of both sexes consists of a sort of apron covering what nature bids them conceal, and another piece of similar cloth wrapped around the body." Dr. Rollin's report discussed the signs of venereal disease he observed among the people. He had examined many lepers in the hospitals at Madeira and Manila and also observed the victims of elephantiasis in the South Seas.

Rollin, discussing the question of the introduction of the venereal by Captain Cook's crews, was inclined to believe that the disease existed in the islands before Cook. He thought that it probably was indigenous "or else had been introduced by former navigators."

This detailed description by the learned French doctor is typical of the approach of the experts on board the *Astrolabe* and *Boussole* who were following the example of the scientists of the Cook expeditions. They had been brought up in the encyclopedic atmosphere of the French Enlightenment and their orders contained instructions to observe, measure, and describe everything of interest which they might find in their travels.

The Fate of La Pérouse

The French frigates set their course for the northwest coast of America where the first of a series of tragedies took place. They had discovered and anchored in a bay which La Pérouse named Frenchmen's Harbor (Lituja Bay) on July 13, 1786. Three boats set out to make soundings in the bay. The *Astrolabe*'s longboat and another from the *Boussole* were swamped in a fierce tide rip in the inlet, and not one of the twenty-one men aboard survived, nor were bodies, or even wreckage, recovered. The anguish of the good Captain La Pérouse and the remaining officers and men can hardly be imagined. The search was abandoned after eighteen days. A cenotaph of wood was raised as a memorial and a bottle buried at its base containing the inscription: TWENTY-ONE BRAVE SAILORS PERISHED AT THE ENTRANCE TO THIS HARBOR: WHOSOEVER YOU MAY BE, MINGLE YOUR TEARS WITH OURS.

A second misfortune was to plague the expedition before the year 1787 was ended. La Pérouse had sailed to the Samoan Islands in search of urgently needed fresh provisions. Arriving at a large, well populated, and very fertile island which he called Mauna (probably Tutuila), the frigates came to anchor. Captain de Langle, believing the natives friendly, led sixty-one men in the longboats into a coral-filled cove entered only by a narrow, windy channel. They were in search of fresh water, and the natives along the shore offered pigs and fruits for exchange.

Soon the boats were surrounded by many canoes, and 1,500 islanders had crowded onto the narrow beach along the little creek, causing disorder and confusion. M. de Langle distributed gifts, which led to fighting among the natives. The longboats, ordered to retreat, were then savagely attacked by the mob; the close quarters rendered the guns, already wet, almost useless. Abandoning the longboats, the men sought to climb aboard the pinnaces, which were still afloat. The longboats were instantly ripped apart. The mob, yelling ferociously, rushed forward trying to cut off the French withdrawal. The pinnaces cleared the reef with their cargo of wounded. They came alongside, and La Pérouse heard the tragic news of the death of Captain de Langle, his closest companion and second in command, along with the naturalist, Lamanon, the master-at-arms, Talin, and several of the sailors.

La Pérouse, one of the most humane of eighteenth-century ship commanders, refused to allow his men to fire upon the peaceful natives who filled about a hundred canoes still surrounding the ships. He was dissuaded from sending out a party in retaliation after his lieutenant pointed out the dangers of the reef and the lack of a secure anchorage, together with the certainty of further massacre if the ships went on the reefs.

La Pérouse hung about for two days hoping to find some way of recovering the bodies of his comrades; then, with a heavy heart, sailed on. He called this place Massacre Bay.

The third and final tragedy was the wreck of both French vessels early in 1788 during a hurricane off Vanikoro in the Santa Cruz Islands. For forty years no trace could be found of the great French explorer of the Pacific. Then an English captain, Peter Dillon, solved the mystery at least of the wrecks, various parts of which were salvaged and returned to France. Apparently, there were survivors at Vanikoro but none ever reached home.

The tragedy ended all hope that extensive scientific findings could result from the well-planned, well-equipped expedition. Only La Pérouse's foresight in sending back his journals from Kamchatka and Botany Bay saved the endeavor from total loss.*

---

* Viscount de Lesseps traveled from Kamchatka with La Pérouse's earlier journal. He made the difficult trip overland from Petropavlovsk across Siberia and reached Paris. Forty years later, he was able to identify positively the relics of La Pérouse recovered from Vanikoro. Among these relics were a silver sword guard and spoon which he had left aboard the *Boussole* and a small millstone which the expedition used to grind grain.

Ships that Passed in the Night: May 30-June 1, 1786

On Saturday, the 27th of May, 1786, the *King George* and *Queen Charlotte* of the English expedition to the northwest coast of America, left Kealakekua Bay heading for Maui. On the 28th, they stood off Hawaii still trading for provisions, and on the morning of the 29th set their course for Maui, then about nine leagues off and in plain sight. By eight o'clock on the morning of the 30th of May, Maui was four leagues distant and the west end of Lanai NNW two leagues away. The ships thus coasted the southern side of Maui but did not find anchorage there. Perhaps they were swept past Maui just as the ships of Cook were swept along in February 1779 and just as La Pérouse would be when he left the anchorage at La Pérouse Bay on the 30th.

The entry in Nathaniel Portlock's log for Tuesday, the 30th May, reads as follows: "During the night [the 29th] we had fresh gales and cloudy weather, which occasioned us to shorten sail and tack occasionally. Towards morning the weather moderated. At eight o'clock Mowee bore from North half East to East North East *distant four leagues* [author's italics], and the West end of Ranai [Lanai] North North West, two leagues distant."

At that very moment, with Portlock and George Dixon but four leagues off Maui on the same side, La Pérouse was anchored with his two frigates and was visiting the villages on the southern shore. It seems incredible that the British failed to see the French frigate or vice versa. The best guess is that the *King George* and *Queen Charlotte* had already passed along that side during the night, although the log places them four leagues off Maui in the *morning* of the 30th. The English ships might have been too far ahead of the French to see or be seen. La Pérouse reported that the Hawaiians had been out in their canoes, 120 of them, men, women and children, "since the crack of dawn." If the Hawaiians knew of the Portlock-Dixon tall ships, they gave no indication of this to La Pérouse.

Then to add to the coincidence, the French frigates took the same north route heading for the southwest point of the Island of Molokai "which I coasted at the distance of three quarters of a league, and came into the open sea, like the English [meaning Cook's ships], through the channel which separates the island of Woahoo [Oahu], from that of Morotai [Molokai]." Just before this, La Pérouse had stood to the westward, "passing at an equal distance from the northwest point of the island of Tahoorowa [Kaho'olawe] and the southwest point of the island of Ranai [Lanai]."

While La Pérouse was coasting the southwest shore of Molokai, Portlock and Dixon also stood for Molokai and were only three leagues off the west end. Portlock lay to during the night, and in the morning found his ships had been driven eight or nine leagues to the southwest, "so that instead of fetching with the West point of Molokai, as I expected . . . I found we scarcely should be able to weather the East point of Woahoo, round which we knew there was anchorage." Portlock-Dixon thus were in the same channel traversed by La Pérouse as he sailed out of the islands on May 31st and June 1st, 1786.

So far as is known, there is no record of the French and British sighting each other nor notice taken of the coincidence of their being off Maui's southeastern coast at the same time.

Had they met, another interesting dimension might have been added to the history of Maui.

Vancouver, Friend of Hawaii

A bright young midshipman who sailed with Cook on the Third Voyage, George Vancouver was present on board H.M.S. *Resolution* when his captain was killed at Kealakekua Bay. During that first visit, Kamehameha spent many hours aboard the *Resolution*, where the two first met under friendly auspices.

Fourteen years later, in February 1793, Vancouver, now captain and leader of his own expedition for the British government, sailed into Kealakekua Bay. He quickly learned that Kamehameha was now the paramount chief and king of the Island of Hawaii, and he welcomed Kamehameha aboard his flagship (also named the *Discovery*). "On his entering the cabin, I again recognized the identical *Tamaahmaah* I had known some years before, by the savage austerity and gloom that was now diffused over the countenance of that chief." Kamehameha was indeed furious as, at this point in his visit to Vancouver, the High Chief, Kaiana, appeared in the cabin offering gifts of hogs and presenting the captain with a fine feather helmet.

The Chief, Ke'e-au-moku, also present at this meeting, then objected that Vancouver had refused to accept *his* offer of twenty of the finest hogs because there was no room for them on the already crowded ship. Vancouver was embarrassed by the rivalry of the Hawaiian chiefs but wrote in his log, "I was, however, fully determined on the measures to be persued; to pay my principal court to *Tamaahmaah,* as the King of the whole island" and, despite the displeasure he had noted in the King's reaction to Kaiana, Vancouver was impressed with Kamehameha's "open, cheerful, and sensible mind, combined with great generosity and goodness of disposition."

In this first encounter, Vancouver had already exhibited some talent for tact and diplomacy which he later exerted in an admirable but fruitless attempt to organize a pact of peace between the warring chiefs of Maui and Hawaii. On another occasion, Vancouver was to act as representative of the British King in arranging an agreement with Kamehameha and the Hawaiian chiefs to "cede" the Island of Hawaii to Great Britain. Although this was never recognized by the British government and was probably not considered by Kamehameha as more than an informal protective alliance, it was an important link between the British and the Islands.

There were other notable actions of Vancouver, who appears to have found a very real friendship with the Hawaiian king. He brought the first cattle to the Islands and persuaded Kamehameha to place a *kapu* on them for ten years so that they multiplied and became an important asset in trade and in the economy of the Islands. He established a strong friendship for Britain among the chiefs, especially Kamehameha, which was to have lasting impact upon island history.

Vancouver Visits Maui, 1793

After his visit with Kamehameha, Vancouver moved over to Maui on March 10, 1793. Following the path which La Pérouse and Portlock and Dixon had taken in 1786, he cruised off the Kipahulu-Kaupo districts, describing them as having "a verdant and fertile appearance, and . . . seemingly in an advanced state of cultivation. From the number of villages and distinct houses, we were led to consider it as tolerably well inhabited."

Observing the radical change from verdant to arid as the ship moved westward, Vancouver rounded the south point at La Pérouse Bay where a chief came out in the first decent canoe he had seen off Maui that day.

By this chief, Vancouver sent a handsome present to *Titeeree* (Ka-hekili), the king of Maui, to accompany a message of friendship.

Vancouver finally came to anchor in the roadstad of Raheina (Lahaina) after observing closely the character of Maui's terrain along the southwest coast and the condition of the people and the land.

As Portlock had discovered seven years earlier, the western shores of Maui were in a state of devastation due to the depredations of the wars between Kamehameha and his chiefs and Ka-hekili and his sons and warriors. Those few Hawaiians who did come out to trade were observed to travel in worn and inferior canoes and often had little in the way of hogs or fruits to barter with the ships.

Even in Lahaina, Vancouver found indications of dire poverty—"Mowee and its neighboring islands were reduced to great indigence by the wars in which they had for many years been engaged." Vancouver was warned to be alert to possible attack on Maui. He had been told all the details of the Olowalu Massacre by John Young, who was an eyewitness, and he also suspected Maui's Ka-hekili in his position as High Chief of Oahu of complicity in the murder of Captain Hergest and Mr. Gooch of Vancouver's supply ship *Daedalus* which earlier had visited Waimea Bay on Oahu in search of fresh water and provisions.

Vancouver Argues for Peace

The significance of Vancouver's three visits to Hawaii in the years 1793-1794 lies in his close association with the Kings Kamehameha, Ka-hekili, and the other high chiefs of Hawaii, Maui, Kauai and Oahu.

Vancouver made repeated arguments to the chiefs for a peaceful settlement and offered to act as personal ambassador to bring about negotiations between Maui and Hawaii. He suggested that a chief be sent to Hawaii from Maui with full powers to negotiate a settlement, but the Hawaii chiefs said that they would consider a chief from Maui as a spy and "would instantly put him to death." Kamehameha was obviously not enthusiastic about a settlement, yet Vancouver continued his efforts, approaching Ka-hekili and Ka-'eo on Maui. At first the Maui chiefs tried to persuade Vancouver to stay at Maui and take their side in the struggle, which he refused to do.

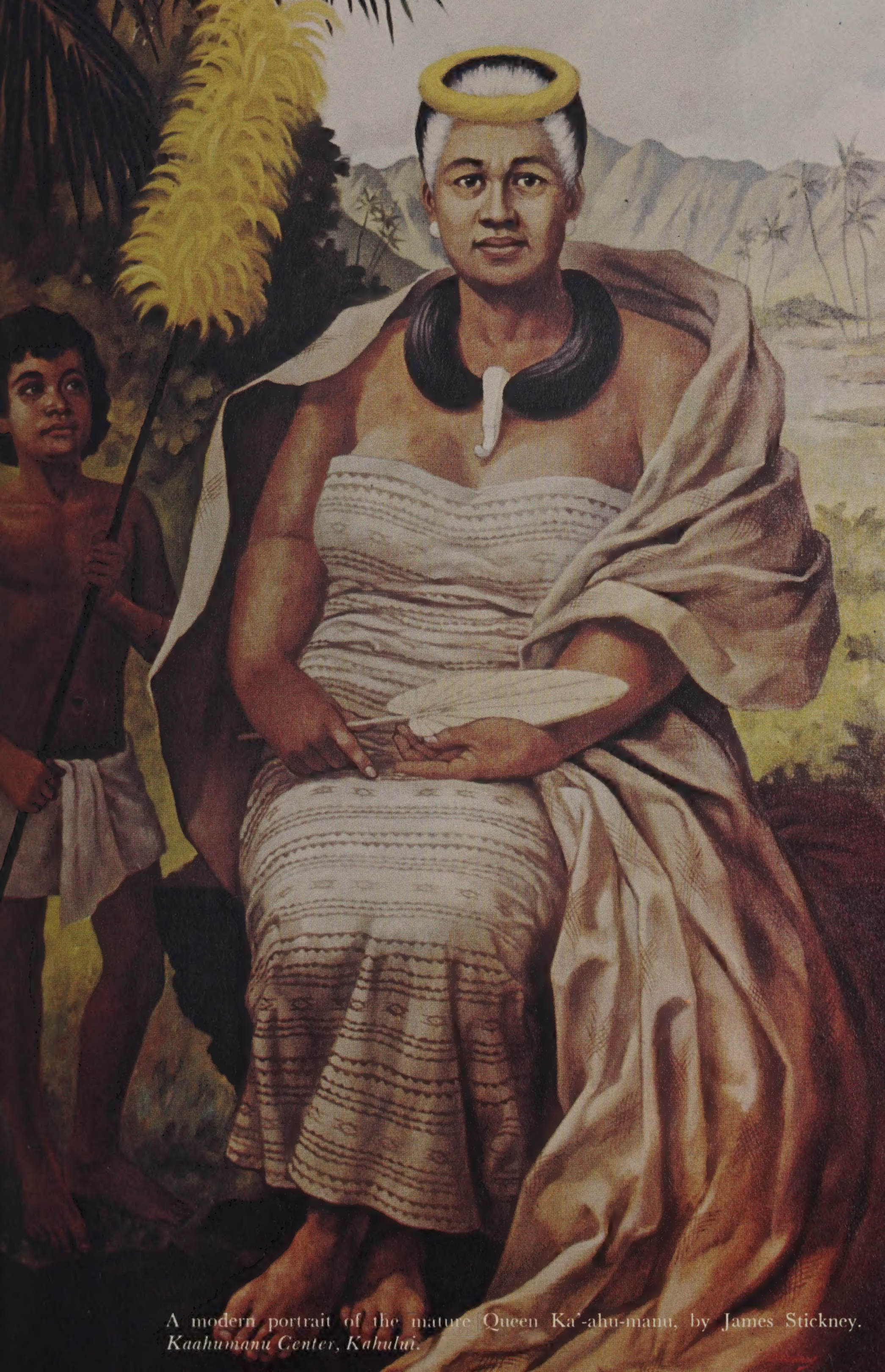
They listened attentively to his arguments but were willing to send a chief to Hawaii only if Vancouver himself would take him to Kamehameha in his ship under safe conduct. Vancouver felt he could not spare the time to do this and, after several days at Lahaina, where he and King Ka-hekili and Ka-'eo exchanged visits, sailed on to Oahu and finally Kauai, where he was also welcomed as a friend.

Vancouver contributed to the stabilization of relations between the chiefs and the visiting captains. He felt real friendship for Kamehameha, and, though Ka-hekili was then at the end of his life and impoverished by war, he was treated with the same respect and generosity as Vancouver had extended to Kamehameha.

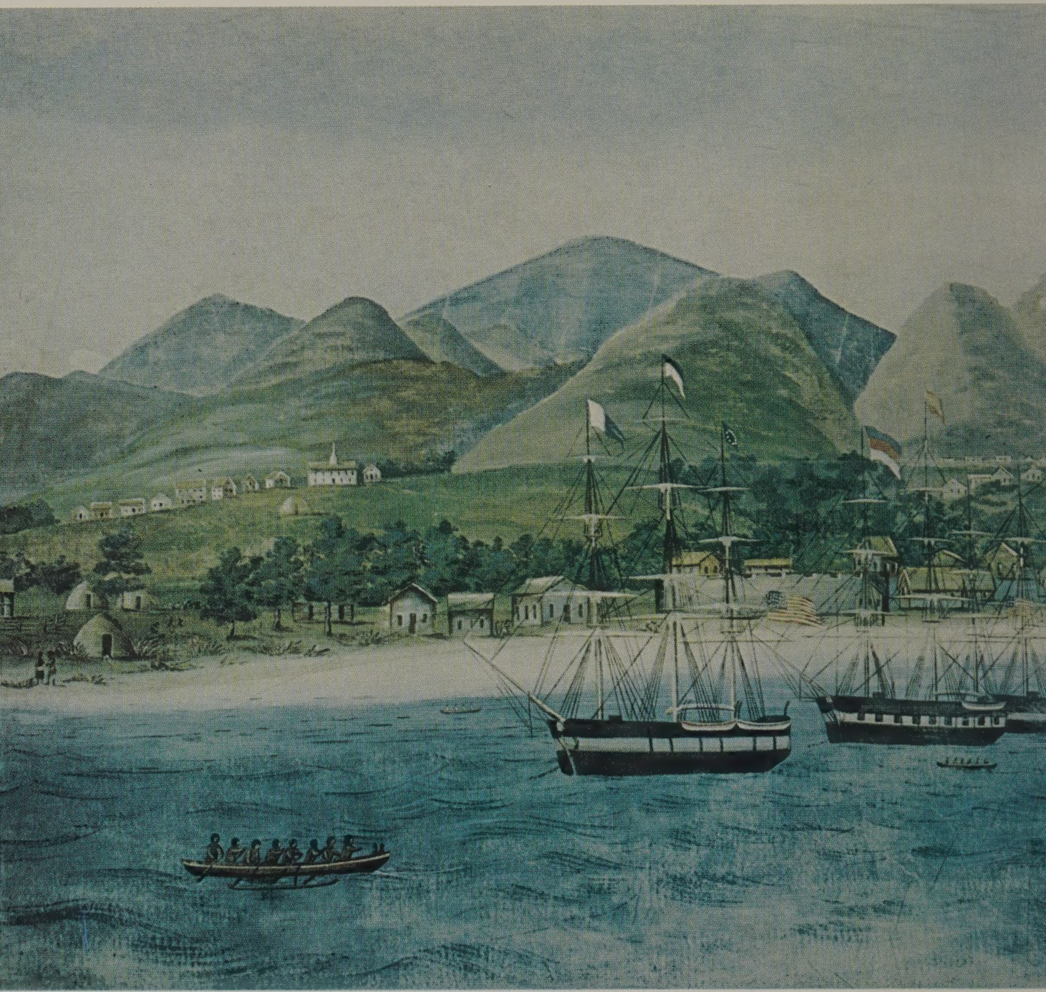
Moreover, Vancouver was sincere in his efforts at peacemaking. Even though he saw long range benefits for Europeans, and especially Englishmen who would follow, he also had altruistic motives in urging the chiefs to make a peaceful settlement and halt the tragic destruction which was hurting their own people most of all. Vancouver handled the punishment of the murderers of Captain Herqest and his men with skill and with justice appropriate at the time to both British and Hawaiian concepts. Although it is possible that one or more of the three Hawaiian men executed for the murders was innocent, Vancouver rightly insisted that the executions be performed at the orders of the Oahu chiefs themselves and not by his orders.

Throughout his time in the Islands, he literally "stuck to his guns" when the chiefs begged him to sell them arms. He even refused the requests of Kamehameha by saying that King George of England had put a taboo on firearms.

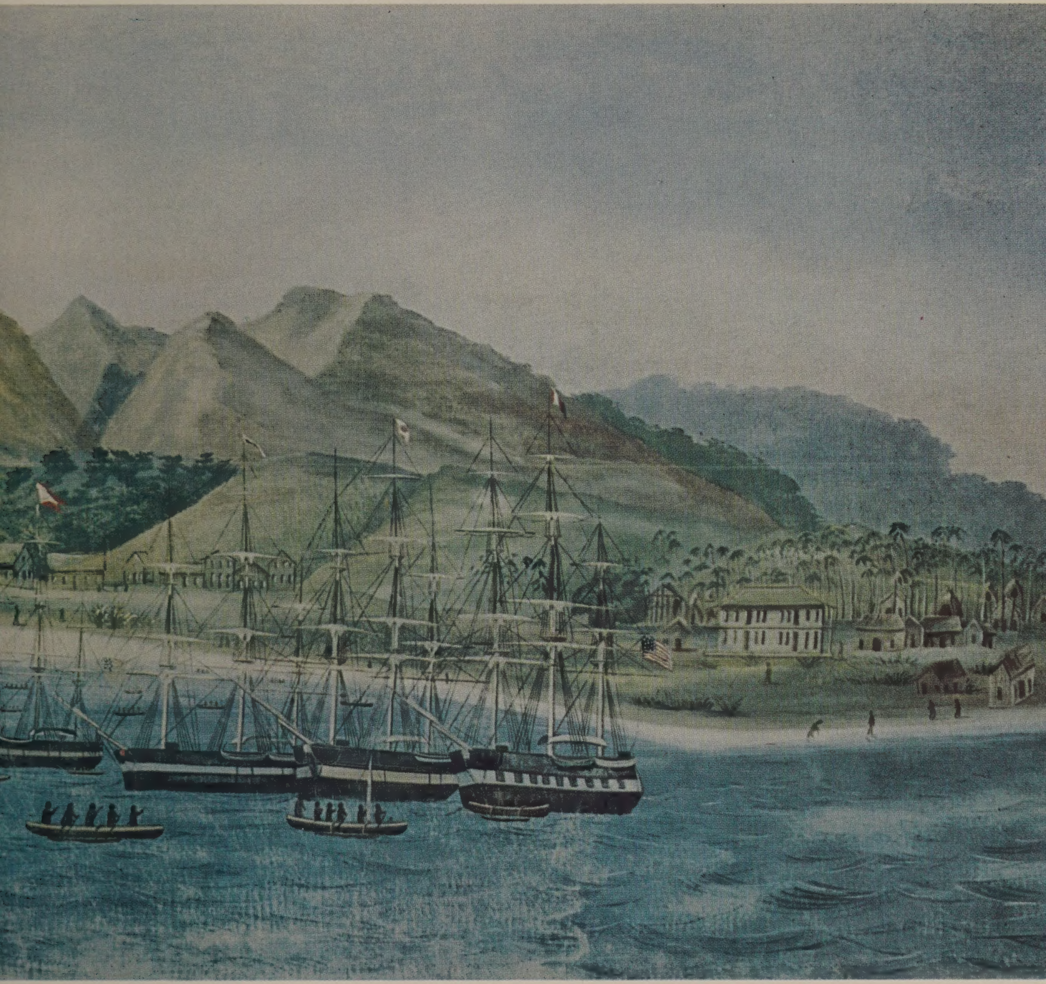
A monument to George Vancouver is found at Kihei on the eastern shore of Maui near where he first met King Kahekili. It was placed there by people from Vancouver, B.C. in 1968.



A modern portrait of the mature Queen Ka'-ahu-manu, by James Stickney. *Kaahumanu Center, Kahului.*



Whaleships in Lahaina Roadstead, Maui. Detail from the Russell-Purrington Panorama, 1843. *Old Dartmouth Historical Society, New Bedford, Massachusetts.*



The Kipahulu Valley and Seven Pools.

Robert Wenkam, Friends of the Earth

6

WOMEN'S LIB—HAWAIIAN STYLE: 1819-1832

In which the stories are told of the "Favorite Wife" and the "Sacred Wife", alii daughters of Maui who brought the mana of their dynasty to the development of the kingdom of Hawaii.

> The eating kapus were most irksome and humiliating to women; at this time [1819] there were two female chiefs who had a very powerful influence in the affairs of the nation: Keopuolani, mother of Liholiho and the highest ranking ali'i in the kingdom; and Kaahumanu, who shared the government with Liholiho. After the death of Kamehameha I, both of these powerful chiefesses favored the overthrow of the old system. *Kuykendall,* The Hawaiian Kingdom.

With the death of Ka-hekili, his brother, Ka-'eo-ku-lani, and his son, Ka-lani-ku-pule, the rule of Maui by high chiefs of the Ke-kau-like dynasty came to an end. But the blood of the Maui chiefs persisted. It was carried by the Queen, Ke-opu-o-lani, and into the royal line of successors, her sons, Liholiho (Kamehameha II) and Kau-i-ke-aouli (Kamehameha III). This blood ran also in the veins of Ka-'ahu-manu whose mother, the High Chiefess Na-mahana, was a high-ranking daughter of Ke-kau-like.

The bitter wars of the chiefs had at last come to an end, but a new influence was at work that could greatly change the character of Hawaiian life and manners. Haoles (foreigners) had already visited or taken residence in the Islands in increasing numbers, bringing with them their virtues and their vices; their technology and their diseases.

The conquest of the Islands was completed, and Kamehameha proceeded to consolidate his power and practice the arts of peace. His old advisor, John Young, was appointed to govern the Big Island, and he sent one of his most faithful military leaders to govern Maui. This was the High Chief, Ke'e-au-moku, his general and the father of Queen Ka-'ahu-manu.

After the wars, the restoration of Maui, especially Lahaina, had begun. Vancouver and others had already surveyed the harbor and roadstead, and ships came to anchor there in increasing numbers after 1796. For a time, Lahaina became the capital of the kingdom, and Kamehameha had built there a brick "palace" furnished in the English style for his beloved Ka-'ahu-manu.

In 1808 a visitor, Archibald Campbell, described this brick building in his journal and then wrote: "Maccalum [an English resident] informed me that it [Maui] was very fertile; that provisions were abundant, and much cheaper than either Owhyhee or Wahoo." Maui had recovered from the terrible wars of the 1790's.

"The Favorite Wife"

Listen ye, therefore, to my commands. This is the voice of Ka-'ahu-manu! *Dowager Queen on the departure of Kamehameha II for England in 1823.*

Kamehameha I took her to wife not only for her beauty but because of her powerful connections. From the time of her marriage, she wielded immense power through the chiefs of her blood whose allegiance to her husband was guaranteed as long as she held the special position of power for which we have only the inadequate title, "Favorite Wife."

After her husband's death, this female chief of the Maui line ruled (but did not reign) for thirteen years, first as Premier, then as Regent. Her parents, her brothers and her sisters, her nieces and nephews and adopted children were appointed to the key positions in the island kingdom and thus were the sources of her power.

The name of this queen came from her maternal uncle, Ka-hekili-nui-'ahu-manu, last king of an independent Maui Island kingdom. When she was born in the cave at Hana, her parents, though no longer loyal to Ka-hekili, strangely enough gave the baby girl the name Ka-'ahu-manu ("The Feather Cloak") from the name of her royal relative.

Hawaii under Ka-'ahu-manu

Elizabeth Ka-'ahu-manu was a queen who, if she had lived in a more powerful nation, would rank near the top of any list of great queens in history.

She was beautiful, she was imperious and intelligent; she became a capable ruler, perhaps the most powerful ruler of the Islands after her husband; she loved powerful and handsome chiefs, one of whom was her first husband, Kamehameha the Great, and another, the charming Ka-umu-ali'i, hereditary chief-king of Kauai, whom she married when she was widow and Regent of the Kingdom.

In marrying the King of Kauai, Ka-'ahu-manu finally achieved what Kamehameha never actually accomplished—she bound Kauai fully into the Kingdom through dynastic marriage and consolidation of power. She did this by virtually kidnapping the Kauai king, marrying him, and his son and heir into the bargain. On his death, she appointed her brother to govern Kauai.

The High Chiefess Ka-'au-manu was born on Maui in a small cave at the foot of the hill of Ka'uiki about 1768, the only daughter of the High Chiefs, Ke'e-au-moku and Namahana.

The Hawaiian historian, S. M. Kamakau, apparently quoting a description of the young Chiefess at the time she attracted the attention of Kamehameha, wrote as follows:

"A handsome woman, six feet tall, straight and well-formed was Ka-'ahu-manu, without blemish and comely. Her arms were like the inside of a banana stalk, her fingers tapering, her palms pliable like kukunene grass, graceful in repose, her cheeks long in shape and pink as the bud of a banana stem; her eyes like those of a dove or the *moho* bird; her nose narrow and straight, in admirable proportion to her cheeks; her arched eyebrows shaped to the breadth of her forehead; her hair dark, wavy, and fine, her skin very light."

Kamakau tells us also that Ka-'ahu-manu was prized above all others by the King. "All her requests were granted. She was allowed to enter the meetings of the high council" and eventually took her father's place therein, after his death in 1804. Kamehameha also granted to her the power of pardon, while her lands were turned into places of refuge.

The death of her royal husband was both a tragedy and a triumph for the Favorite Wife. Undoubtedly, she loved the

King, and she also enjoyed the extraordinary powers which he had conferred upon her. Iolani Liholiho was already designated the heir to the throne, but for a short time there was uncertainty about the transfer of power while the rituals surrounding the preparations for burial were carried out.

Even in the matter of the burial, Ka-'ahu-manu had a voice: at the council of the chiefs regarding disposition of the body, one and another offering to take it, Ka-'ahu-manu said "faintly," according to Kamakau, "This body is not ours; ours was the breath, the body belongs to one of the chiefs." Apparently, she meant Liholiho, who, with his mother, took the remains in a canoe to a secret cave where it was placed by Hoapili. "The morning star alone knows where Kamehameha's bones are guarded."

After the King's death, Ka-'ahu-manu claimed that Kamehameha had willed to her the unique position of *kuhina nui*, which placed her as prime minister and co-ruler with his son, Iolani Liholiho. The new King was proclaimed at the council of chiefs, the council agreeing that Ka-'ahu-manu, "the royal guardian," should have the honor of announcing the last commands of Kamehameha to the heir.

It was a dramatic occasion. The tall and handsome Liholiho, flanked by high chiefs, the beautiful Dowager Queen, who spoke as follows, addressing the young King:

"O, heavenly one, I speak to you the commands of your . . . (father). Here are the chiefs; here are the people of your ancestors; here are your guns; here are your lands. But we two shall share the rule over the land." *

After the old king's death, it was Ka-'ahu-manu and Ke-opu-o-lani, with the reluctant consent of the young King, who broke the ancient restrictions of the old religion, and it was Ka-'ahu-manu who decreed the destruction of the images and the *heiaus*. In the following year, 1820, the *Thaddeus* appeared off Kona with the first company of missionaries from Boston, bringing a new religion to replace the old.

---

* It has been said that Ka-'ahu-manu arrogated this power to herself on the King's death. If so, none at the "wake" dared to challenge her.

Ka-'ahu-manu did not welcome the missionaries. She had abolished the traditional restrictions and was not about to accept new ones of the New England puritanical type. Her power was growing as the court moved first to Lahaina and then to Honolulu, where one of the triumphant periods of Ka-'ahu-manu's life began.

She fell deeply in love with and married the King of Kauai. King Ka-umu-ali'i was a chief of highest rank, the son of Ka-'eo, the grandson of Ke-kau-like, and the still powerful ruler of the Island. This dynastic marriage was also a love match, but it did not prevent Ka-'ahu-manu from marrying shortly thereafter the King's son and heir, Ke-ali'i-a-ho-nui.

The missionaries were shocked, but the people loved their Queen. For them, she could do no wrong, and by the standards of alii of her day and traditionally, plural marriages were neither sinful nor illegal.

The great happiness of their Queen in this period was a joy to the people. They called her "The New Ka-'ahu-manu." She toured every island and was greeted warmly by chiefs and people. They entertained her with affection and deep aloha. She placed her brother on Kauai as governor; another brother was already governor of Hawaii. Her father was succeeded as governor of Maui by Hoapili, her brother-in-law.

Then, a series of tragedies came to darken this time of triumph. Queen Ke-opu-o-lani died at Lahaina in 1823. Early in 1824, her husband Ka-umu-ali-i passed away, and only a month after that her adopted children, Kamehameha II and his young queen, died in London. Christian services were held for all these royal funerals, and it was in this period that Ka-'ahu-manu asked to be instructed in the "Christ life."

Suddenly she was giving public endorsement to the new religion. She went to church. She knelt at the altar. Full aid and cooperation was promised. Ka-'ahu-manu had at last surrendered herself and her people to the Christian faith. Other chiefs on Maui, Kauai, and Hawaii followed her lead as did thousands of her people.

Her power did not end with the death of Kamehameha II. She became the guardian, Regent of the Kingdom, during the minority of the eleven-year-old Kamehameha III. She had declared on the departure of Kamehameha II for England: "The Kingdom is now in my hands and my word is the law of the land. Listen, ye therefore, to my commands. This is the voice of Ka-'ahu-manu!" And so it was.

As Regent, she seemed to recover her old strength. She successfully resisted the impending revolt of Boki, guided the young King, and struggled against the evil forces which were destroying her people. The Reverend Hiram Bingham became her close spiritual guide and advisor.

Queen Ka-'ahu-manu often returned to Maui even after the court had moved to Honolulu, where affairs of state required her residence. The people of Lahaina and of all Maui turned out to honor their Queen with feasts and entertainments. When King Ka-umu-ali'i died in 1824, she arranged for him the Christian burial he desired—not on Kauai, the island he loved, but in the cemetery of the Waine'e Church at Lahaina.

Widowed the second time, the Dowager Queen, still Regent for Kamehameha III, during one of her sojourns on Maui, visited Wailuku, where she attended services in a temporary structure serving as a church. She asked that when a new church should be completed, it would be named for her: This is the beautiful old Kaahumanu Church (built 1876) in Wailuku, restored in 1975 to its original beauty.

One of the missionaries described a public meeting in Lahaina in September 1824, just a year after the death of Ke-opu-o-lani, at which Ka-'ahu-manu "called forward three young men belonging to her private school, informed us she had appointed them teachers for her people on the windward side of Maui, and desired that they might be supplied with books sufficient for large schools. She then addressed herself to the headmen of that district who were present, commanding them to have good schoolhouses erected immediately, and to order all the people in her name to attend to the *palapala*, and the *pule*."

At the same time, the Queen pronounced the *Lua-ehu* laws at Lahaina. These were the first written laws under the Hawaiian Kingdom and were proclaimed against murder, theft, boxing, fighting, and desecration of the Sabbath by work or play.

Eight years later, in February 1832, Ka-'ahu-manu sailed for Maui aboard the *Mikapala*. "People from all over Maui had gathered at Lahaina to meet her and construct a fort at this place in order to quell disturbances from the whale ships. In one month it was completed. On this tour, Ka-'ahu-manu met David Malo and said, 'I want you to work hard to get an education in order to become an adviser and office holder to administer the affairs of government under my king.' " After visiting the Big Island, the Queen returned to Lahaina where she and Hoapili, still governor of Maui, set forth additional new laws to protect the government, abolish prostitution, and require legal marriage. Hoapili was then the husband of Ka'ahu-manu's sister who also was a widowed queen of Kamehameha. Their marriage was the first Christian marriage to be performed among the chiefs.

The "Sacred" Wife

Ke-opu-o-lani was the last of the great *niau-pio* chiefs of all Hawaii. She is called the Sacred Queen in the history books, although the English word "sacred" is not strictly accurate. In the old Hawaiian system she was the highest ranking chief.

She was born at Wailuku on Maui about 1778 of the paramount line of Ke-kau-like, her great-grandfather, and was thus the grand niece of the Maui kings who followed him.

In order to understand the position of a sacred alii in the old Hawaiian scheme of things, it is necessary to describe the background in some detail. All the highest alii chiefs were considered of divine origin and were literally treated as sacred in their persons. However, in the Hawaiian way, those chiefs born of brother-sister unions were considered most sacred of all, and these unions were carried out especially to assure the succession to royal power and to obtain the intensified *mana* important to community and family.

Kamehameha, though related to high chiefs of both the royal lines of Hawaii and Maui, was not a sacred alii. Thus, for dynastic reasons—in other words, to secure the succession of royal power to his children—he took to wife the most sacred princess, Ke-opu-o-lani, who bore him two sons and one daughter. The sons, as is well known, became the heirs to the kingdom established by their father. They were chosen above all other offspring of Kamehameha from the time of their births and were treated as sacred alii by the Hawaiian chiefs and people.

Ke-opu-o-lani was the daughter of Kiwala'o and Ke-kui-apo-iwa, son and daughter of Maui's Queen Ka-lola and Hawaii's King Ka-lani-'opu'u. Kiwala'o was betrothed to his own sister, and Ke-opu-o-lani was born of this union. This type of brother-sister union involved the *Ho ao* ceremony. From birth the couple was carefully guarded; both were virgins; they were taken to the *heiau* at the chosen time and from evening until dawn remained in a tent-like house fashioned of finest white tapa. All the populace was present, and the chanting of the genealogies (*mo-o-ku-aa-hau*) of the youth and maiden were recounted.

All this was under the direction of the *kahunas* (priests and teachers). At dawn the couple came out of the house erected on the *heiau*, and the youth was free to go. His sister was carefully guarded until time for birth of the child of this union which was for the purpose of keeping the blood lines sacred. Again, everyone gathered around the *heiau*, the family and all relatives present as before.

Everyone prayed and chanted while the infant was born of the maiden. The *kahuna-nui* (chief priest) held the infant for all to see. This was to be the future ruler.

In her younger years, Ke-opu-o-lani was carefully guarded, living under the strictest rules. In her middle years, she suffered poor health for a time, and the King ordered human sacrifices at the *heiau* to bring about her recovery. On the births of her children they were taken from her to be raised by others, as was customary with the alii; all except Nahi-'ena-'ena, the princess whom the Queen Mother insisted on keeping.

Ke-opu-o-lani followed the King on his campaigns and lived with him at his various headquarters and courts. Their unions partook of the "sacred" character inasmuch as the King deferred to this Queen in any matter involving rank, always recognizing her rank as superior to that of his own. For example, Kamehameha was said to approach Ke-opu-o-lani's quarters on his knees, and because of their higher rank, referred to his own children by Ke-opu-o-lani as his grandchildren.

Iolani Liholiho, her oldest son, became Kamehameha II; the younger son, Kau-i-ke-aouli, ruled as Kamehameha III from 1825 to 1854, the longest rule in Hawaiian history. Their sister, Nahi-'ena-'ena, was victim to the confusion of the radical changes in religion and custom brought about by western influences, especially the missionaries. She was pulled in the direction of the old religion by her rank and her upbringing and the worship of her followers while being strongly under the influence of the Christian missionaries whom her dying mother had asked to care for her.

Funerals at Lahaina, 1823-1825

Kamehameha was the last king to be interred according to the old religion. He was a deeply religious man and always faithfully maintained worship of the war god, Ku-'ka'ili-moku, whose care he had expressly inherited from his foster father and uncle, Ka-lani-'opu'u. However, the King forbade, in this case, the human sacrifices which would normally have been a part of the ritual of invocation of Ku-'ka'ili-moku, saying, in reference to Liholiho, "The men are sacred to the King."

By 1823, Queen Mother Ke-opu-o-lani was at Lahaina with her second husband whom Kamehameha had given the name

Hoapili ("Bosom Companion"), asking him to act as the guardian of his (Kamehameha's) wives. The adoption of Christianity by High Chief Hoapili and the sacred Dowager Queen was the first big step forward for the young New England missionaries.

The Death of Ke-opu-o-lani

Queen Ke-opu-o-lani died in 1823, not long after the establishment of the mission at Lahaina. There is a woodcut which shows the funeral procession in silhouette, the coffin borne on the shoulders of the chiefs, the King Liholiho following, and her two younger children carried on the shoulders of their *kahus.* It was a sad loss for the missionaries, as it was for the Hawaiians and their royal family; saddest of all for the children.

As with the death of Kamehameha, which marked the end of the old era, the death of his "sacred wife," literally in the arms of the new religion, marked the beginning of a new era in Hawaii.

It was to be an era of rapid and drastic change. When the wailing for the departed Queen Ke-opu-o-lani, his sacred mother, had died away, Liholiho, King Kamehameha II, decided to visit the King of England. He took with him his half-sister and favorite wife and a small retinue of chiefs and retainers. The King designated his young brother, Kau-i-ke-aouli, as his successor and Ka-'ahu-manu as regent. Kau-i-ke-aouli and his sister, the Princess Nahi-'ena-'ena, continued to live in Lahaina, there to receive the homage of chiefs and people while studying their letters and religion.

In 1824, the chiefs decided to share the *palapala* with the people, especially those who attended them. In 1824, the

Princess, a beautiful child of nine, together with her stepfather Hoapili, presided over her own school which had that year an enrollment of two hundred and seventy children.

That same year brought still another royal funeral to "Lahaina of the breadfruit leaves," "the land of the chiefs." This was the royal funeral of the gentle Ka-umu-ali'i, son of the great Maui and Kauai chiefs.

The two royal children seemed happy there for a time; then suffered another blow. Their brother and half sister, the King and Kamamalu, died of the measles in London in 1824. Their bodies were returned to Hawaii by the British Government in H.M.S. *Blonde*, under command of Lord Byron, cousin of the poet.

"When the ship reached Lahaina on May 4, 1825, the little Princess, Rev. Richards, and Hoapili paced up and down the beach waiting for the landing party. As it approached, Hoapili seated himself on a chair in the sand, while Richards with the Princess leaning at his side, stood at the Chief's left. The people gathered in large numbers, thronged across the entire beach and began to wail.

"When the landing party touched the shore and started to walk up the sand, a passage was opened through the people for them to approach the chiefs. Hoapili rose from his chair, and with a great roar of wailing, held out his arms to Liliha, his daughter. The Princess, in her turn, sprang from Richard's side and ran to Liliha's arms; meanwhile the chiefs, led by Hoapili in an ancient custom, knelt down and rubbed their faces in the sand.

"The wailing mounted, drowning out the noise of the sea until Richards became concerned over the possibility of violence in the midst of this display of grief for the dead monarchs. He suggested to Nahi-'ena-'ena that they pray to Jehovah in the hope that a religious ceremony would diminish the surge of feeling and curb the rising confusion. She passed the suggestion to Boki, and mats were spread for prayer. This simple action brought quiet to the crowd."

The bodies of the King and Queen were brought ashore and carried to the small island, a tabu spot sacred to the chiefs, where they remained lying in state until the *Blonde* was made ready for the trip to Honolulu. The chiefs went aboard for the sad journey to Honolulu, accompanied by Hoapili, Nahi-'ena-'ena, and Kau-i-ke-aouli, the Prince, now to become King Kamehameha the Third.

The Sister of the King

Since the time of her birth, the subject of Nahi-'ena-'ena's marriage to her brother had been discussed by the chiefs. It was to be expected that the missionaries would disapprove of such a marriage for their little Princess on both religious and biological grounds. The problem, however, was not only an ethical or biological one or even one caused by the necessity of breeding future royalty. The two children had been brought up together; they had been paired from the time of the Princess' birth, and a great devotion existed between them. It was a cultural and psychological reality that in Hawaii royal brothers and sisters were often very close to each other. Such attachments appear in many of the old legends and chants.

The chiefs consulted the missionaries in 1824 about the propriety of a union between Nahi-'ena-'ena and Kau-i-ke-aouli. One of the missionaries consulted, Elisha Loomis, wrote: "It is well known here that the Prince and Princess for a considerable time past have lived in a state of incest. This would appear extraordinary in America as the Prince is but ten years of age and the Princess less than seven or eight. It should be remembered, however, that persons arrive at the age of puberty here much sooner than in a colder climate. Chastity is not a recommendation; the sexes associating without restraint almost from infancy."

The devotion between the young King and his sister, deepened by their isolation as sacred alii and as children early bereaved of their parents and brother and sister, deepened further and intensified as they grew into maturity. At the same time, Nahi-'ena-'ena's devotion to the new religion, as taught her by the Reverends Stewart and Richards, increased. She was ever reminded of her mother's dying wish that she live the life of a Christian. She was admitted to the church at Lahaina in January 1827. She was baptized in company of some of her attendants and received the Lord's Supper.

"She took the name, Harriet, or Harieta, which her mother had chosen in tribute to the friendship of Mrs. Stewart, the missionary's wife . . . Charles Stewart, her devoted teacher and his wife were not present on this occasion; because of the illness of his wife they had left Hawaii in 1825. William Richards was now the Princess' mentor at the mission."

The Reverend Richards and the Princess made two memorable tours of Maui. These were for the purpose of visiting the schools and churches and encouraging the *palapala* and the *pule*. These tours were greatly enhanced by the presence of Nahi-'ena-'ena, who was received everywhere in the Island with reverence and joy. Richards climbed to the crater, rejoining the Princess at Kahului for the canoe trip along the north shore. Everywhere the Princess spoke to the people, and Richards was most impressed with her address at Kaupo, where she said: "Formerly we [the chiefs] were the terror of the country —when visiting your district—we should have perhaps bidden you erect an heiau and after being worn out with this labor, we should have sacrificed you in it. Now we bring you the *palapala*—the word of God—why should you fear it?"

"But Nahi-'ena-'ena was by now growing weary with the necessity of examining the state of her soul;" she was physically mature and longed for the adulation which was hers as a high-born alii. Furthermore, many of the chiefs were her companions and instructors in dancing, singing, drinking, and card playing. She was more often in Honolulu and taking part in all important occasions as the partner of her brother, who in this period was himself prone to drown his sorrows in strong drink.

His sister was often swept up in the activities of Kau-i-ke-aouli's increasingly dissolute court, returning to Lahaina off and on to seek repentance and attend to her school and her religious duties. In October 1830, she took up residence in the Richards' home and made valiant efforts to resist the pull of Honolulu and her desire for her beloved brother, the King.

In the end, she returned to the ways of the dissolute court, and not even the Richards could get her to return. In 1834, the union of Nahi-'ena-'ena and the King was announced formally in Honolulu by a crier sent throughout the city.

She returned to Lahaina in 1835, alternately attending religious services and seeking the help of the Reverend Andrews and her old teacher, Richards, and falling back into her old ways and into spells of depression. In 1835, she was married at the Waine'e church to a young chief, Lele-io-hoka. The Reverend Richards performed the ceremony.

"The last year of her life [1836] was one of illness, confusion and dejection. The King came to Lahaina and the brother and sister again took up a life of revelry and there were brief times when she escaped from the darkness and madness in her heart. She gave birth to a child; the infant, a son, lived only a few hours. After the birth she remained gravely ill and died at the end of December 1836.

Nahi-'ena-'ena's funeral was the last of the burials of Hawaiian royalty at Lahaina. "Chiefs and commoners lamented for the Chiefess whose children they had hoped to see carry on the line of ruling chiefs." Her brother was grief stricken. "He escorted his sister's remains on board a warship fitted out to carry her in state to the tomb of their mother. In Lahaina a royal roadway was constructed from the shore to the place of burial, and the funeral was celebrated in pomp with a fine procession. 'This last funeral and service of prayer concluded the weeping and lamentation of the chiefs and people of Maui for their beloved Princess.' As for Kau-i-ke-aouli, such was his love and regret for his sister that he continued to live on Maui for eight years. . . . He made the day of his sister's death a public holiday, ordered guns to be fired from the government forts from Hawaii to Kauai, and gave big feasts every year in its celebration."

The King was shocked and sobered into taking stock in the state of his Kingdom. He went on to become one of Hawaii's most distinguished monarchs.

Death of Ka-'ahu-manu

The "Favorite Wife," Ka-'ahu-manu—the extraordinary woman born in a cave at Hana who rose to be, after her husband the Conqueror, Hawaii's greatest leader—died in 1832. She was sixty-four.

Her death was more a triumph than a tragedy. Chiefs and commoners from all the islands gathered to sing their Queen to sleep. She was borne by retainers and chiefs to her home in the Manoa Valley beyond Honolulu.

At the end, she died secure in her love of the Christian God. She was buried in the Royal Tomb at Nu'uanu with the rituals of the new religion so different from the funeral ceremonies of Kamehameha only thirteen years earlier.

In so many ways during those few years the old order of Hawaiian life itself had changed.

7

CHIEFS, WHALERS, AND MISSIONARIES: THE HEYDAY OF LAHAINA: 1820-1860

In which the favored place of the Maui chiefs becomes, in a few decades, the political capital of the kingdom, the whaling capital of the Pacific notorious for debauchery and at the same time, becomes the first important center for propagation of the Christian religion by the Protestant missionaries from New England.

Once more we sail with a northerly gale
Towards our island home.
Our main mast sprung and our whaling done,
And we ain't got far to roam.
We're homeward bound from the Arctic ground,
Rolling down to old Maui.

Sung by American whaling men in the nineteenth century, this chantey anticipated the sailor's long-awaited return to Maui's Lahaina Roads.

You are to aim at covering these islands with fruitful fields and pleasant dwellings, and schools and churches, and raising up the whole people to an elevated state of Christian civilization.

From the instructions to the American missionaries from the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions.

The developments at Lahaina in the first half of the nineteenth century were so dramatic and bizarre as to stir the imagination. From a sleepy Hawaiian village, long the favorite watering place of the alii and many times the battleground of the chiefly wars, Lahaina became for a short time the political and cultural center of the newly-developing kingdom of Hawaii. At the same time, this village of grass houses with its fine protected roadstead, together with Honolulu, became the very center of the whaling industry of the Pacific, a port famed among seamen for its grog shops and its lusty women and by the sea captains as a winter haven to prepare for the long, arduous voyages to the very edges of the lonely Pacific Ocean in search of the whale.

It is a strange coincidence that the whalers and the missionaries, both of them coming as they did mainly from the New England coast of the United States, should have met head on in this remote Pacific town beyond the Horn* on the western shore of the Island of Maui.

Long before these Yankees found themselves working at cross purposes in Lahaina, perhaps five hundred years before, the Polynesian alii selected Lahaina as a place for good living and relaxation. The long beach was warm, and the gentle waves off the reef were perfectly formed for the surfing which the chiefs so much enjoyed.

The whole area around Lahaina was well-watered by streams of fresh water flowing profusely out of the West Maui Mountains. These fresh, cool waters caused the plain of Lahaina to flourish in the hot sun with all kinds of tropical growth, with sugar cane, breadfruit, coconut, and banana.

---

* The saying among the whalers was, "There is no God beyond the Horn."

This same water filled the walled taro patches from streams and canals to produce the excellent taro of Maui.

William Ellis wrote in his journal in 1823: "The appearance of Lahaina from the anchorage is singularly romantic and beautiful. A fine sandy beach stretches along the margin of the sea, lined for a considerable distance with houses, and adorned with shady clumps of Kou trees, or waving groves of cocoa-nuts. . . ."

Those same streams provided the fresh water so essential to the merchantmen and whalers who found refreshment there in increasing numbers after 1820.

The Peleleu Fleet

At the turn of the century, Kamehameha had decided to build an immense fleet primarily for the invasion of Kauai but also as a means of keeping his warriors busy with the promise of conquering more lands. A young supercargo on board the *Neptune,* an American sealing ship anchored off Kawaiahae in August 1798, was befriended by the King. His name was Ebenezer Townsend, Jr. He wrote in his diary, ". . . while we lay there, I proposed learning him (he spelled the King's name Amaiamai-ah) the compass, which I had some reason to regret, for he kept me at it continually until he learned it." He watched Kamehameha's skilled canoe makers finishing the seventy-foot long war canoes that were called *wa'a peleleu.*

He was told that the Hawaiians could paddle these canoes at nine knots, and he was impressed by their fine workmanship. At the same time two white men were building a brick house at Lahaina for the King who told young Townsend that he intended to reside there part of the time.

In 1802, Kamehameha moved his *peleleu* fleet (said by Kamakau to have had 800 canoes) first to Kipahulu and Kaupo, where *heiaus* were erected and their tabu declared by the young prince, Liholiho—then only five years old but already proclaimed as heir to the kingdom. They then went on to Lahaina from Kaupo where they remained about a year, "feeding and clothing themselves with the wealth of Maui, Molokai, Lanai, Kaho'olawe, and worshiping the gods." It was while the expedition was encamped at Lahaina that Ka-me'e-ia-moku, one of the four chief counselers of the kingdom and the father of Hoapili, died at Pu'uki, Lahaina.

It is said that before he became too weak Kamehameha went to see him. He turned and kissed the cheek and said, "I have something to tell you. Ka-hekili was your father; you were not Keoua's son; here are the tokens that you are the son of Ka-hekili." The chief said, "Strange, that you should live all this time and only when dying tell me that I am Ka-hekili's son. Had you told me this before my brothers need not have died. They could have ruled Maui while I ruled Hawaii." Ka-me'e-ia-moku answered, "That is not a good thought. If they lived, there would have been constant warfare between you. With you alone as ruler the country is at peace."

Kamehameha's brick palace was on the point at Lahaina just in front of where the present library is located. It was the very center of the long encampment which lasted during the year 1802. There were so many chiefs and retainers that the thatched dwellings and taro patches stretched as far as the war canoes. The retinue including the households of the King's children was estimated at a thousand persons.

The year in Lahaina was a year of peace and relaxation.

Walls of taro fields which had been destroyed in earlier wars were repaired and the rich land was generally made productive again. House lots and taro fields in Lahaina were given by Kamehameha to some of his favorites. Instead of roads they used the little pathways that were formed by the tops of the stone walls around the taro fields, slightly raised and kept in excellent condition. In 1803 Kamehameha moved his fleet to Oahu. Before his departure the King received from Captain Cleveland of the *Lelia Byrd*, a horse and mare. He learned to ride and became an excellent horseman. The horse created a sensation in Hawaii. Soon all the chiefs followed the King's lead in acquiring horses. Horseback riding became the most popular sport in Hawaii, and roads were built to accommodate horse-drawn vehicles.

The *peleleu* fleet never reached Kauai. In 1803, a plague struck Oahu. The King survived but many died. Another attempt was defeated by a storm which turned back the fleet. In 1810, Ka-umu-ali'i agreed to making the Kauai kingdom tributary to the Kamehameha dynasty, and the beautiful canoes were left to rot on the beaches at Waikiki. They had served their purpose and had, besides, become obsolete as the King had acquired modern sailing vessels armed with modern artillery.

Whaling: Lahaina 1820-1860

Even before Kamehameha's death, Lahaina began to develop as an economic center, first as a point of supply for visiting ships and then as a port for the loading of sandalwood. Lahaina also offered a desirable port of call for the trans-Pacific traffic in furs. The business of provisioning the whaling fleet began in 1819 when the first whale ships visited Hawaii. When, for political reasons, the capital was moved to Honolulu and the whaling industry declined, Lahaina became once again a drowsy village on a sun-drenched beach, and progress passed it by.

However, during the middle part of the nineteenth century, Lahaina became for a time, the whaling capital of the world. The first two whale ships which arrived in 1819 had increased to a hundred by 1824, and by 1829 one hundred and seventy whale ships had visited Hawaii. In the period 1829-1849, twenty years, the number doubled, and then almost doubled again, and the whole industry moved northward from equatorial seas to the Sea of Japan, the Arctic, and Hawaii.

The impact on Lahaina of the whaling business at its height was intense. The Reverend Dwight Baldwin, medical missionary at Lahaina, wrote: "Ten days since we had two whale ships, next day ten came in, and the next day six. From that time to this, scarce an hour but we have seen from one to half a dozen coming down the channel—fifty ships now here."

During the early spring and fall from the early 1820's through the 1860's this pattern was repeated and Lahaina roads became the principal anchorage of America's whaling fleet. The town became the recruiting grounds for supplies and Hawaiian seamen, a great many of whom, in those days, began signing up as whalers or able seamen on the many ships coming in. In 1846, Lahaina's peak year, 429 whale ships arrived there compared to 167 which anchored at Honolulu.

At that time, Lahaina was a town of 3,000 people, fifty-nine stone or wooden houses, and 882 grass houses. Lahaina roads offered ships the following advantages enumerated by a contemporary observer: "The anchorage being an open roadstead, vessels can always approach or leave it with any wind that blows. No pilot is needed here. Vessels generally approach through the channel between Maui and Molokai, standing well over to Lanai, as far as the trade will carry them, then take the sea breeze which sets in during the forenoon, and head for town. The anchorage is about ten miles in extent along the shore and from within a cable's length of the reef in seven fathoms of water, to a distance of three miles out with some twenty-five fathoms, affording abundant room for as large a fleet as can ever be collected here."

Each ship was boarded by the harbor master who presented the captain with a copy of the regulations. It said in part: "Every master of a foreign vessel who desires the privilege of purchasing refreshments for his vessel at Lahaina, shall pay to the harbor master, ten dollars, in return for which said master shall be entitled to receive five barrels of potatoes, with the privilege of purchasing at pleasure in the market supplies for his ship, according to the rules of the place."

The Reverend Baldwin wrote that the chief food items supplied to the ships were "water, hogs, goats, bananas, mellons, pumpkins, onions, squashes, sweet potatoes, young turkeys, ducks, fowls, and beef, all of which can be had in abundance; but the greatest article for which they come is Irish potatoes which grow plentifully in the interior of this island." Irish potatoes, grown mostly at Kula, were a drawing card for Lahaina as a whaling station. The American sailors much preferred them to the yams of Oahu.

Fresh water was one of the most important commodities supplied to the whalers at Lahaina. The process of procuring water was described by one of the whaling captains as follows: "It was the custom for the whale ships to land the casks to be filled with water upon the beach, then the kanakas [native men] . . . would roll them to the watering place and, after filling, roll them back to the beach and raft them off to the boats."

Lahaina also offered the whalers recreation. As several whaling captains pointed out in a letter to the government, "The life of a whaler is one of hardship and toil, and upon his arrival at your port, he needs rest and relaxation . . . 'tis absolutely necessary to the lives of the sailors that they should have liberty days. . . ." It was over what were considered the necessary ingredients of a sailor's "rest and relaxation" that the missionaries and government officials disagreed with the whalers and the owners of the brothels and grog shops which catered to them.

They carried on a continuing feud which burst into violence from time to time. The first serious Lahaina riot broke out in October 1825, when the crew of the English whaler *Daniel,* angered by a new law passed by the chiefs prohibiting women from visiting the ships, roamed the streets menacingly for three days. They twice threatened the home and lives of the Reverend William Richards and his wife, believing them to be the instigators of the law.

The riot of 1827 was also started by an English whaler, this time under command of an American, Captain Clark. Governor Hoapili, finding that some women had broken the tabu and gone aboard the whaler *John Palmer,* seized Captain Clark's boat and would not let him go back to his ship until the women had been returned. Captain Clark told his mate that if he had not been released within an hour, the ship should fire upon the town. Clark promised to return the women and was released, but before he could reach his ship, the *John Palmer* began firing. Apparently the cannon were aimed directly at the mission house for the cannon balls landed in the yard. When Clark boarded his ship the firing ceased; but he sailed away to Honolulu without returning the women.

Much of the problem of maintaining law and order in the town of Lahaina centered around the control of liquor, a problem in which the whaling captains shared, as a letter from several of the captains to Governor Hoapili of Maui shows: "We do not any of us like to go to Oahu, because bad men sell rum to our seamen. We like your island, because you have a good law preventing the sale of this poison. But now, after lying here in peace for some weeks, a vessel has come among us from Oahu with rum for sale. Our seamen are drinking it, and trouble is commencing. We now look to you for protection."

In 1843, while the islands were temporarily ceded under duress to Great Britain, grog shops were licensed and rioting flared up again. "A party of half-drunken sailors went to the King to take him. The King's people returned the sailors' stones with great fury and one of his attendants knocked the leader senseless to the ground. After the riot was dispersed, he was taken to the fort—but the war went on. A chief on horseback was assailed by the sailors with stones—the natives flew to his aid, and stones flew on both sides—some skulls supposed to be broken—but none have yet proved fatal. Toward evening as the seamen gathered toward the landing, war, noise, oaths, obscenity, and hurled stones filled the air—but a party armed with swords by the authority, somewhat moderated the rage of the sailors."

In 1845, the constable of Lahaina complained, "There are so many Beer shops here, and they have so many chances of selling spirits in their Beer without detection that, do all I can, and use all the means in my power, I cannot get a fair chance to fine them. . . ."

One of the most famous sailors to arrive at Lahaina was Herman Melville who arrived on April 26, 1843, aboard the *Charles and Henry,* a whaling ship owned by the Coffins of Nantucket. Melville took his discharge at Lahaina, then sailed on the *Star* for Honolulu. His departure was well-timed, for the week after his departure, the *Acushnet,* which he had deserted in the Marquesas, dropped anchor at Lahaina. One of the first things that Captain Pease did was to go to the United States Commercial Agent to report, "Richard T. Green and Herman Melville deserted at Nukuhiva, July 9, 1842."

Hoapili, Governor of Maui: 1823-1840

Among those who stood fast against the outrages of the whalermen was High Chief Hoapili. Intimate of Kamehameha I, he had been an early convert to Christianity. After the King's death he had married Ke-opu-o-lani and, after her death, he had married another high-ranking widow of the King, a sister of Ka-'ahu-manu. She took the name of her husband in the Christian manner and was always afterward referred to as Hoapili-wahine (Mrs. Hoapili). Governor of Maui from 1823 until his death, he had, despite frequent and difficult opposition, maintained a reasonably stable and peaceable authority. He also had a powerful influence on the development of the new religion, education, the laws of the new kingdom, as well as its political, social and cultural development.

A confidant of both Kamehameha II and especially of Kamehameha III, the latter was with him at the time of his death on January 2, 1840.

The missionary report for the Lahaina station spoke of the good faith of Hoapili and his good works ". . . his sense of obligation to Christ for renewal and pardon of sin, his longing to be gone, that none of us could mistake the meaning. Though in his last extremity, Hoapili rose upon his knees, which to us seemed impossible, and then poured out his soul to God. When through he said, 'napau' ["It is done"]. His anxiety for the future welfare of this nation, his warnings and entreaties to the King [Kamehameha III, then aged 29 and at the height of his dissolute period], and the tears he poured out over him were almost as much as his majesty could endure. . . . We need not add, that we remember him with affection and interest and that we greatly deplore his loss as a civil ruler. The Lord raise up many such to preside over this perishing people. There was no wailing at the funeral as Hoapili had forbidden it." The report is not signed but was obviously written by Baldwin.

Hoapili's good works included the building of the Waine'e Church where, at his request, he was buried next to the grave of the Reverend Charles McDonald, young teacher who had died the year before.

For a time after the death of Hoapili, grog shops and brothels openly plied their trade, and the chiefs who replaced him, as well as the haole commissioners, were more interested in making money than saving souls or maintaining strict adherence to the regulations.

However, the temperance movement was gaining ground, and in September 1846 forty people had signed the temperance pledge, including captains and seamen. Apparently there were some setbacks as indicated in a letter to Boston in December written by Dr. Baldwin: "A few nights since after midnight our police hauled out at the windows at the lodging place of one firm of our merchants eleven young Hawaiian girls who had sold themselves to pollution, slaves to the Devil and their own lusts. One of this firm was our late deputy consul who came out with Mr. Abel. Another proprietor was our present deputy consul who came out with Judge Terrill, his in-law; a third was a professor of religion with respectable connections from New York. Oh tempera!!"

The New Learning

Despite the turmoil often resulting from the whaling trade at Lahaina, it simultaneously became the center of education for the Hawaiian kingdom.

It was also here that the planning took place which led to the enactment of many of the kingdom's first laws. One of these required that all persons under twenty-six who wished to marry must prove their ability to read and write. This, coupled with strict laws prohibiting sex outside of marriage, led to a remarkable level of literacy!

The *palapala* (writing) and the *pule* (prayer) went hand in hand with the new religious instruction. The first school in Lahaina began in the year 1823. The Reverend Stewart wrote, "Monday, June 2nd, our school has been commenced." This was the school of Queen Ke-opu-o-lani, so that she could learn the *palapala*. At the age of fifty-five, according to the Reverend Richards, one of her teachers, she was "indeed a diligent pupil seldom weary with studies, and often spent hours over her little spelling book."

Then, Ka-'ahu-manu, a year later at Lahaina, proclaimed that, "When schools are established, all the people shall learn the *palapala.*" During Ka-'ah-manu's reign as premier, schools sprang up everywhere. These were native grass houses without benches or shelves. All of the pupils sat upon mats. "The *ali'i* scholars were of both sexes and all ages. The teacher blew a shell when it was time for school to assemble, which was about three in the afternoon." By 1832 schools for native children began. By 1835 the mission press in Honolulu had printed 16,000 primers. Five years later twenty-two textbooks had been printed in the Hawaiian language.

Lahainaluna School

The high school of which Kuykendall has written "was, without a doubt, the most important school in the Hawaiian islands during the reign of Kamehameha III." It was opened in September 1831 and was the first high school west of the Rocky Mountains. One of the dormitories was named for Hoapili, who, with his wife, had given 1,000 acres of land for its establishment.

The Reverend Andrews and his sixty adult students built the first house of stones, but it fell during a heavy storm. They built a second house of stones and timber. The logs were dragged from the forests of east Maui over a distance of thirty-five miles to Ma'alaea Bay where they were placed in canoes and brought to Lahaina. The haole missionaries marveled at the industriousness and capacity for hard work exhibited by the Hawaiians. Even the chiefs took part, as they had done in the past when building a *heiau* or preparing the taro fields. King and court were once observed by the missionaries singing as they walked into the town covered with mud from their labors in the royal taro patch near Lahaina.

The report of the Minister of Public Instruction for 1850 stated that Lahainaluna "has sent out over 400 educated Hawaiians . . . they are now the leading men of the native population all over the islands."

At the time when the United States consisted of twenty-three states, there were only nine high schools, and book learning for all the people was frowned upon in America and Europe. Several years later, the printing house, Hale Pa'i, an old coralstone building still in existence, was built by the missionaries who founded Lahainaluna. It was in this building on February 14, 1834, that the first newspaper west of the Rockies was printed. It was called *Kalama Hawaii,* or "Torch of Hawaii."

When, by 1841, public education had progressed to the point where a school inspector was needed, David Malo, a graduate of Lahainaluna School, was named Superintendent of Education for Maui, Lanai, and Molokai. His first report, dated April 1841, stated that there were ten schools with ten teachers and five hundred and thirty-seven scholars at Lahaina.

An important part of the development of education as well as religion, and the political development of the kingdom, is attributed to King Kamehameha III. On October 10, 1840, he signed the final draft of the first written Hawaiian Constitution. This act was performed by the King at Lahaina.

Rikeke

Kamakau, in his *Ruling Chiefs*, wrote that, "The Hawaiian people believed in William Richards (Rikeke), the foreigner who taught the King to change the government of the Hawaiian people to a constitutional monarchy and end that of a supreme ruler, and his views were adopted."

One cannot read the diaries of these Lahaina missionaries without recognizing the qualities which they brought to their religious and educational mission to Maui. Richards was one of the best. When he and his wife had to go to the states because of the health of Mrs. Richards and the children, David Malo wrote a long letter to their church in Northampton, Massachusetts, fearing the church might persuade them not to return. Malo wrote: ". . . he has ever dwelt in the midst of us laboring constantly day and night, taking no rest from his toils during the whole period of his dwelling with us, forever seeking the good of these Sandwich Islands."

William Richards' career was most closely connected with Maui. The teacher of the Queen Ke-opu-o-lani, a founder of the school system and of the Lahainaluna School, the staunch friend of the Hawaiian people, his unusual qualities were recognized by the youthful Kamehameha III as he sought to establish a stable kingdom in the islands.

Richards was a brave man. He defied the drunken whalemen who several times threatened his life and that of his wife, who once stood courageously forth to challenge a riotous crowd and to protect her husband.

He was also a scholar and a man of great spiritual strength. Richards translated, with David Malo's help, several books of the Bible into Hawaiian. He preached and taught and fully practiced the Christian way. He ministered to the poor and the downtrodden as well as to the alii.

Kamehameha III appointed William Richards to two very important positions. He was translator and special advisor to the King, and he became Hawaii's first Minister of Education. He is also known in Hawaiian history for the Richards-Ha'alilio Mission. Accompanied by the brilliant young secretary of the King, Timothy Ha'alilio, Richards was sent to Washington, London, and Paris, there to secure guarantees of the independence of the Hawaiian kingdom which was being bullied by high-handed, self-appointed representatives of the British government in Honolulu.

Richards and Ha'alilio were successful in their diplomatic mission and thereby performed a service of the greatest significance for Hawaii since it helped in preserving the independence of the kingdom.

Unfortunately, the fine chief, Ha'alilio, died on the long voyage home. Richards returned to continue his service as Minister of Education until his death in 1847. He was buried at Lahaina near the tomb of his first royal pupil, Queen Keopu-o-lani, in the cemetery by the church whose name was changed from Waine'e to Waiola ("The Waters of Life").

The Medical Missionary

No less remarkable in his way was the young Doctor Dwight Baldwin who replaced Richards as the preeminent religious leader at Lahaina. He came there in 1835 from Waimea, where the cold air was felt to be bad for his health. He and his good missionary wife found their life work at Lahaina, Maui. Eight children were born to them there, of whom six lived to people the island with sugar planters, business men, ranchers, farmers, and even a few "Chicken Baldwins," so called because they raised chickens at Kihei.

Dwight Baldwin both preached and treated the sick, often traveling in bad weather for several days to points as far away as Hana or crossing choppy seas to treat a patient on Lanai or Molokai. He was instrumental, with other medical men, in saving Maui from the smallpox which swept Oahu. He promoted and visited schools. He treated the many who suffered from the measles epidemic and, when rejoicing that none had died from it, was appalled to find many dying in the month after the measles epidemic from a severe diarrhea brought on by eating the foods which had been avoided during the measles period.

Baldwin spoke most highly of David Malo, the Hawaiian missionary and historian. "David Malo has, perhaps, the strongest mind of any man in the nation. . . ."

David Malo is buried in a lonely grave on the summit of Mt. Ball above the Lahainaluna School. It was his request to be buried there away from the white men whom he felt would supersede his race. The missionaries he always upheld, but he had seen too many foreigners of a different type.

The Catholics

It is said that the first Mass was said on Maui in January 1841 at the home of one Joaquin Armas, a cowboy who worked for King Kamehameha III.

Though strongly opposed by the Protestant missionaries and by the chiefs, especially Queen Regent Ka-'ahu-manu, the Catholics gradually became established on Maui. One local legend has it that the faith was propagated by sailors from a shipwrecked Spanish galleon in the sixteenth century. However, the first known Catholic priest at Lahaina arrived in 1846 and quickly found a large following in the Island.

Early converts were Helio and Petero, brothers from Wailua and Wailuku. Helio was baptized in Honolulu and returned to Maui to travel about preaching the Roman Catholic faith. He became known as "The Apostle of Maui" and died at Wailua between Hana and Kaupo where his grave on a peak in the center of Wailua gulch is marked by a twenty-foot cross of concrete. The Maria Lanikula Church was built in 1858 at Lahaina.

One of the most interesting stories of the Catholics on Maui is that of the march from the Kaupo-Kipahulu districts all the way to Wailuku when the judge at Wailuku ordered the Catholics to be arrested. The men who were deputised to arrest and bring them to trial in Wailuku tied them together with ropes and marched them along the Pi'ilani Highway through all the districts of Hana and Nahiku, Kaenae, Kailua, Haiku, and Paia.

They were led by Helio and his brother, and as they went along they were joined by others on the long march to Wailuku. By the time they reached Wailuku there were several hundred —too many, indeed, to be tried, and the judge at Wailuku dismissed the case. Petero and Helio and the others made their way back along the highway, preaching as they went.

The journey of the captive Catholics from Kahiki-nui, Kaupo and Hana, which took more than a month, was called the *paakaula* ("the tying with ropes"). The result was the tripling of the number of catechumens on Maui, then over 1,000. The Edict of Toleration by Kamehameha III at Lahaina on June 17, 1839, gave religious freedom to his people, and the first Catholic catechism, the Vahi Katekimo, was published in Honolulu in 1847.

St. Anthony's Church, a stone edifice replaced an earlier frame structure at Wailuku. It was blessed by Bishop Maigret on May 3, 1873. After Mass, the Bishop expressed the hope that one of the priests would volunteer to help the lepers on Molokai. Father Damien answered the call and, in time, became the "fellow leper of my little flock." St. Anthony's Church was destroyed by fire on November 1, 1977.

The Decline of Whaling

The peak for the whaling industry in Hawaii was reached in 1846 when the total number of whale ships reaching Hawaiian ports was almost six hundred. The years 1845 to 1855 were the best, and eight times before 1860 the annual total ship arrivals was more than five hundred. During that period, Hawaii's total economic dependence on whaling became obvious.

The long decline began in the late fifties. In 1859, oil was discovered in Pennsylvania, and the consequent production of cheap kerosene spelled the doom of whaling. The Civil War just about ruined the whaling fleet. Forty whale ships were taken to the harbor entrances at two of the southern port cities where they were sunk by the Union in an attempt to block off the harbors. The Confederate raider, *Shenandoah*, burned the Hawaiian ship *Harvest* in the Marianas in 1865.

But the final disaster came in 1871 when thirty-three ships, nearly half of them Hawaiian, were trapped in an early freeze in the ice floes north of Bering Strait. The crews escaped, but the ships and cargoes were lost. Five hundred Hawaiian sailors reached home penniless. The cost to Hawaiian whaling interests was at least $200,000, and, to the industry, ten times that much.

With the decline of whaling and the growth of Honolulu as the political capital, the heyday of Lahaina passed. For a time the growth and development of the sugar industry revived the commercial life of Lahaina, but the historic town drowsed in the sun for many decades until the middle of the twentieth century when Lahaina became a destination, not for thousands, but literally for millions of people.

8

SUGAR AND WATER

In which sugar becomes king on Maui replacing the whaling trade; a California millionaire acquires the crown lands of Maui and founds the largest sugar plantation; two great ditches bring water to the dry isthmus; and two missionary sons establish the Maui dynasty of Alexander and Baldwin.

It requires 500,000 gallons of water to produce a ton of sugar. *Plantation official as quoted in* Maui Sun, *December 26-January 1, 1978.*

Sugar cane grows wild in Hawaii. It was introduced by the Polynesians who brought cuttings with them from the South Pacific. When off Maui in 1778, Captain Cook purchased a large quantity of cane from the canoes which surrounded his ships. The brew which he made from the Maui cane and insisted the men drink for its nutritional value very nearly touched off a mutiny on board the *Resolution*. He had substituted "cane beer" for grog but when the men protested, he reluctantly restored their daily ration of rum and water.

Many of the earliest Chinese residents in Hawaii were knowledgeable in sugar production, the *tong see* (sugar masters), establishing successful plantations on Maui and Hawaii. In 1828, two Chinese merchants established the Hungtai sugar works at Wailuku.

During the early part of the nineteenth century many attempts were made to turn Hawaii's wild cane into a cash crop. A passenger on the *Blonde* in 1825 was a Mr. Dickinson who decided to settle in Manoa Valley on Oahu, where he established, in cooperation with the Oahu governor, the High Chief Boki, a sugar cane field and small mill. The mill was moved closer to Honolulu, and the sugar cane was turned into rum, much to the displeasure of the missionaries, the Regent Ka-'ahu-manu, and the Christian chiefs. The latter placed what was, in effect, a kapu on the operation, and the missionaries, by refusing use of their bullock carts (the only means of transporting the cane) effectively put an end to the venture. Ka-'ahu-manu then caused the cane fields to be destroyed.

As whaling declined, efforts were made at the islands to find some industry to replace its prime position in the Hawaiian economy. The missionaries and the traders, as well as the Hawaiians themselves, looked increasingly to the land instead of the sea for answers to this problem. If they were able to develop agricultural products it might overcome the instability of the whaling industry. As Daws put it in his history of Hawaii, "people would not have to go on thinking of themselves as whoremasters or whalermen."

The idea of agriculture became most attractive when the gold rush in California suddenly brought into being a new market for Hawaiian produce. The timing was excellent. The whaling season of 1847-48 has been very poor, and businessmen in Honolulu and Lahaina were overstocked. Nevertheless, by the end of 1848 the stores had been stripped of everything that might be of use in the gold fields—from pickaxes to playing cards and even Bibles. Many of the white men and hundreds of natives joined the rush to California.

In 1850, the Hawaiian government passed laws permitting aliens to buy land in fee simple. Investors went heavily into debt to buy property and planted crops in anticipation of selling to the west coast market. "Speculation in sugar was rife as long as the gold rush lasted but when the market failed, disaster followed immediately. The procession of bankruptcies was mournful in the extreme and many planters were shaken out of the business altogether."

Nevertheless, some survived, and by 1860, despite general depressed conditions, the number of plantations had risen to twelve, and all were busy and sugar prices were rising.

Then came the Civil War which, while crippling the whaling industry in the Pacific, proved the making of the Hawaiian sugar industry.

Southern sugar disappeared from the market, and in the northern states of the Union sugar prices climbed high. The planters could sell with profit even after paying the heavy U.S. tariff.

By 1866 there were thirty-two plantations and mills at the islands compared with twelve in 1860; one and a half million pounds were exported in 1860, and in 1866 the figure was almost eighteen million pounds.

Planters began to form companies to share the risks. Hackfeld took over Ladd & Company's now bankrupt Koloa Plantation on Kauai. Others were formed by Castle & Cooke and C. Brewer, who were withdrawing their money from whaling to invest in plantations.

Another slump came at the end of the Civil War with a number of plantations going under at the same time. The biggest bankruptcy was that of Walker, Allen & Company. Creditors got less than thirty cents on the dollar.

Planters had realized at the time of the gold rush that they had a real labor problem. It was difficult to find a remedy. Native population did not work out. It was said to be lack of discipline and different attitudes toward labor, or that Hawaiians were lacking in ambition and were not willing to invest time to make money. Yet, this was not quite fair. In ancient times they had built 5,000-acre fishponds and enormous temple platforms.

During the gold rush, hundreds of Hawaiians were going into business for themselves on Maui—growing potatoes and hauling them to the port where they were snapped up and shipped to San Francisco. The Maui fields were called Nu Caliponi, or New California; potatoes were gold, and a fortune could be dug out of the ground by one man. The potato boom was short lived, and, when prices dropped, the Hawaiians lost interest. Perhaps the problem was that Hawaiians did not share the white man's concept of time. The real problem was the rapid expansion of the sugar industry at the same time that the Hawaiian population was declining.

The first shipload of Chinese "coolies" was brought to Honolulu in January 1852 and the workers distributed among the planters. After working out their contracts, most of them drifted to the cities to become merchants. These were by no means the first Chinese in Hawaii. Vancouver had seen one in 1794, and by end of the eighteenth century there were several.

In 1840, on Maui, several Chinese had mules in operation and made sugar on shares. *The Sandwich Island Mirror* for May-June 1840 stated that "the sugar made at Maui is said to be of much better quality than at Oahu and Kauai."

The missionaries helped promote the production of sugar. The Reverend Elias Bond at the north Kohala station on the Big Island was instrumental there in developing the growing of cane. He learned from a Chinese who operated a small sugar mill. Father Bond saw the employment of the natives as a means of saving them from the tragic migrations to Honolulu which were depopulating the country districts of north Kohala.

Dr. Baldwin at Lahaina encouraged the industry as did many others of the brethren. The Reverend Richard Armstrong wrote from his station at Wailuku, Maui, July 7, 1840: "By a request of the King I have taken some part in inducing the people about me to plant sugar cane. A fine crop of sixty or seventy acres is now on the ground ripe, and a noble water-mill, set up by a China-man, is about going into operation to grind it. I hope some good from this quarter. I keep one plough a going constantly with a view to the support of schools."

Of greater importance than the sugar produced was the effect on the ideas of the people. Sugar growing communities had an air of prosperity and enterprise and both chiefs and commoners benefited, especially the commoners who, as workers, achieved greater independence. A writer in the *Polynesian* June 19, 1841, noted that when the common people "found their time and labor worth something more than hard words and little food, they were not slow in letting their rulers know it. The result has been that they have enjoyed more personal freedom ever since, and their condition has been gradually improving."

In these years other agricultural enterprises included growing of silk worms, coffee, cotton and rice, but none succeeded like sugar. An American farmer grew fifty-five acres of cotton at Haiku, Maui, in 1838, and an enterprising missionary lady, Miss Lydia Brown, taught classes in weaving at Wailuku. Governor Kuakini of Hawaii visited her school and set up a cotton weaving operation at Kailua-Kona. After his death in 1844, the cotton mill faded out of the picture as did attempts on other islands to produce the cloth.

There were only eleven mills manufacturing sugar and molasses in the islands in 1846; two on Kauai, six on Maui, and three on Hawaii. The following year, by official proclamation, the exclusive ownership of land by the King was finally renounced, and, in 1848, the Great Mahele, or land division of King Kamehameha III provided the final chapter in the collapse of the ancient Hawaiian land system.

In 1851, the use of centrifugals shortened the time for separating the molasses from sugar from weeks to minutes, and the following year one hundred and eighty Chinese contract laborers arrived in Hawaii on the bark *Thetis*. In 1853, steam power was first introduced in Hawaii on Maui, replacing water and animal power on many plantations.

In 1854, a Captain Edwards brought a better variety of cane from Tahiti to replace the early plantings made from early cuttings. This was called Lahaina cane because it arrived first at that port. In 1856, Captain James Makee and C. Brewer II bought Haliimaile Plantation on Maui from the Stephen Reynolds estate for $14,000. This plantation became known as the Brewer Plantation as at that time the firm of C. Brewer and Company became directly interested in sugar.

In 1857, due to labor scarcity, drought, and low prices, the number of plantations dwindled to five, but recovery came quickly and by 1861 there was a large increase in plantations, the number at that time being twenty-two. None of these were using steam as the motive power in grinding, twelve were driven by water, and one by animal power. Sugar tonnage was increasing tremendously as a sugar boom for Hawaii resulted when the supply from Louisiana was cut off during the Civil War.

In 1862 Wailuku Sugar Company was organized by a syndicate which included C. Brewer and Company, Mr. Edward T. Bailey, manager.

The Versatile Mr. Bailey

Mr. Edward T. Bailey was a man of many talents. He and his wife arrived in 1837 with the Eighth Company of Missionaries sent out from Boston. They were stationed at Kohala, 1837; Lahainaluna, 1839; and Wailuku Female Seminary, 1840-1848, where they both taught school. Bailey was the architect for, and directed the building of, the old stone church at Wailuku. He designed and built a water-run mill at Wailuku for grinding wheat and sugar and conducted the earliest manufacture of sugar at Wailuku in a venture which later was merged with Wailuku Plantation. He superintended work on the roads and the building of a bridge across Wailuku Stream, in surveying, and causing to be surveyed native kuleanas (homesteads). He settled land claims, for which he received his principal means of support from the Land Commission. His interest in girls' training schools was shown in the many years he aided in creating and maintaining the Maunaolu Girls' School at Makawao. He was a first rate musician and did much in teaching music. He wrote a synopsis on Hawaiian ferns and a long narrative poem, *Hawaii Nei: An Idyll.* He drew many of the sketches for the engravings made at Lahainaluna. In his later years he painted delightful landscapes, most of them of scenes on Maui. His paintings are exhibited in the old Bailey House (Hale Hoikeike), now a museum in Wailuku.

The Entrepreneurs of Sugar

Activity in the sugar business in central Maui increased rapidly during the 1860's. T. H. Hobron acquired land in Waihee for cane cultivation and Captain James Hobron of Makawao purchased the site of the Waihee mill. Waikapu Plantation was started by James Louzada and his brother-in-law, William H. Cornwell. A mill was erected at the entrance to Waikapu valley. The Waikapu Plantation changed hands a number of times, finally passing into the control of Wailuku Sugar Company in 1894.

The Lewis mill at Waihee was built by Captain James Hobron. Sam T. Alexander was manager and H. P. Baldwin was head luna (field boss). Both men resigned and established Haiku Plantation on Maui. These two men, brothers-in-law, became the founders of Alexander and Baldwin which by 1898 had gained controlling interest in Hawaiian Commercial and Sugar Company, the plantation on Maui which was then, and still is, the largest sugar plantation in Hawaii.

This plantation was originally formed by a remarkable entrepreneur who made a spectacular entry into the field of Hawaiian sugar by buying up most of the sugar crop of the Hawaiian planters in 1876, just at the moment when the Reciprocity Treaty with the United States gave Hawaiian sugar a special advantage in the United States market. The name of this man was Claus Spreckels and his story is a colorful chapter in the history of Hawaii and especially of the sugar business on the island of Maui.

The Sugar Magnate

A century ago everyone on Maui was aware of Claus Spreckels, the so-called "Sugar King" of Hawaii, whom the Hawaiian newspapers dubbed *Ona Miliona* ("the multi-millionaire"). Spreckels had acquired thousands of acres in the valley of Maui, built two huge ditches to water the dry central plains, and built the most modern and efficient sugar mill perhaps in the world.

Very little remains to remind the residents of Maui of Spreckels himself. Of course, there are the vast fields of cane, the Hawaiian Commercial and Sugar Company (HC&S) which he founded in 1882, and the area where once stood the mill and which is called Spreckelsville.

This is the area of the Maui Country Club, a fine residential section along the north shore just beyond the Kahului airport; but even the post office is gone and residents receive their mail at Paia. Few are aware of the story of Claus Spreckels and his contributions to Maui's development.

Mr. Spreckels Arrives

The millionaire sugar baron of California arrived in Hawaii on the steamer *City of San Francisco* on August 24, 1876. The ship also carried the first news of the passage by Congress of the Reciprocity Treaty. A furor was caused as Spreckels at once proceeded to buy up over half of the sugar crop of 1877. Planters in Hawaii and San Francisco were bitterly criticized as he had taken advantage of the situation by buying up the sugar before the price rise had had time to take effect.

Spreckels Makes the Maui Scene

It was on this first visit that Spreckels became interested in Maui. He studied the situation carefully, and he learned much from the example of Henry P. Baldwin and his partner, S. T. Alexander who were then making plans for the construction of the Hamakua Ditch. This ditch was the first large engineering project on Maui and was completed just before the lease on the ditch expired on September 30, 1978. The date was of "more than passing concern" to Claus Spreckels, who had purchased a part interest in the Waihee Plantation and now fully grasped the significance of water rights and the importance of the work of the Maui planters.

When Spreckels returned in 1878 to Maui he brought with him an engineer, Hermann Schussler, "and set in motion the first of a series of enterprises that for many years made him the most powerful figure in Hawaii's economic structure—a powerful factor also in the political life of the kingdom."

Spreckels continued to study the potential of central Maui for sugar production, cultivated his friendship with King Kalakaua, and, through the King, secured purchase and lease of some 40,000 acres of Maui land. He applied for and received water rights for the northern slope of Haleakala and the right to conduct the water to his lands on the isthmus of Maui by means of a ditch. He then developed the great Maui plantation and mill and organized under the name of the Hawaiian Commercial and Sugar Company.

"The first Spreckels ditch ran from the northern slopes to the central plans, some thirty miles of ditch, tunnels, pipes, flumes and trestles. It crossed thirty gulches, some 2,000 feet wide and 400 feet deep. Twenty-eight tunnels, 3 x 8 feet, some of them 500 feet long, had been cut through solid rock. Twenty-one thousand feet of pipe had been used. The ditch itself was 8 feet wide by 5 feet deep, with a fall of about 3 feet in a mile. It delivered up to 60 cubic feet of water a second. All this involved an outlay of about $500,000."

Nevertheless, there can be no doubt that the earlier Hamakua Ditch of Alexander and Baldwin was the greater achievement when it is considered that neither of these men had had any formal engineering training, nor did they have the services of a Hermann Schussler. It was much more difficult for them to raise $80,000, the cost of the Hamakua Ditch, than it was for Spreckels to raise half a million. The Hamakua Ditch was shorter, running seventeen miles mauka (on the mountain side) of the Spreckels ditch, and delivered about 40,000,000 gallons of water a day as compared to 60,000,000 gallons a day delivered by the larger ditch. The story of the building of the Hamakua Ditch is an exciting one and is the more familiar to Mauians. It is told in a later section of this chapter.

As the cane fields spread over the Wailuku and Waikapu commons, the thirsty land cried out for more water than could be supplied by the ditch from northeastern Maui. In 1882, therefore, Spreckels made an agreement with the Waihee Sugar Company by which he obtained, for a rental of $10,000 a year, a large part of the water supply controlled by that company. A ditch was dug to carry this water to the HC&S fields on the western side of the Maui isthmus. Thus, in the course of a few years, the life and appearance of central Maui were transformed."

Money and Politics

Claus Spreckels was a controversial figure cast, as he was, in the mold of the nineteenth-century robber barons who established great fortunes before the turn of the century in America's industrial revolution. He was a crony of King Kalakaua and was able at one time to persuade the King to dismiss a cabinet which held up the granting of the water rights on Maui ardently sought by Spreckels. On this account, he loaned the King the sum of $40,000.

He also bought from the Princess Ruth Ke-eli-kolani her purported claim to one half of the crown lands of Hawaii for the sum of $10,000. He had no intention of claiming one half of all the royal lands but used his claim as a bargaining tool to get control in fee simple of the Wailuku Commons, which were part of the crown lands he had leased for the plantation.

The Marvelous Mill

Many distinguished visitors came to Maui to see the wonderful mill at Spreckelsville, and members of the royal family visited at various times. These included the King, Princess Ruth, and Dowager Queen Emma. Everyone was intrigued with the marvel of the electric lights which Spreckels had installed in the mill.

Queen Emma described one of these visits in a letter to a friend: "Last night Mr. J. D. Spreckels (the son) called and invited me to go and see the electric light which they use at the mill, so this evening was started by train with a party of nearly 600 people for Puunene [the mill was actually a mile or so seawards of the present Puunene mill] where his mill stands. Everything is carried on on the most extensive scale, and the newest inventions are used of machinery, etc. Mr. Spreckels showed us the electric machines where electricity is made and conducted through wires to every part of the mill. You have seen the light no doubt, so can fancy how like unto day was the entire interior and exterior of [the] building. It really was wonderfully grand. . . . There was music, vocal and instrumental, wine and cake at his house and music in [the] train."

Contributions of Spreckels

Jacob Adler, his biographer, believes that the positive contributions of Claus Spreckels to Hawaii, and especially Maui, tend to be overshadowed by his reputation for rascality. Though this is not entirely undeserved, the positive contributions remain more significant, more lasting, and of benefit to the Islands' economy and people.

In the eighteen-eighties, Spreckels' investment in the islands amounted to well over $4,000,000. "Maui owed much of its wealth to his enterprise and example." The arrivals and departures of his Oceanic Steamship Lines ships contributed to the development of the Kahului harbor, the shipping point for the sugar from the Maui plantations.

Some other "firsts" which Spreckels brought to the sugar industry were the five-roller mill, railroad hauling of cane, controlled irrigation, and use of the steam plow, first used by Spreckels' plantation for more effective plowing to reduce use of manpower and increase the sugar yield.

In 1898 at the annual meeting of HC&S, control of "the magnificent plantation" slipped from Claus Spreckels' grasp and that of his sons, Gus and Rudolph. J. B. Castle and associates, with H. P. Baldwin and S. T. Alexander, took control. Although eighty years have passed since then, the HC&S plantation is still the largest and most productive in Hawaii.

Claus Spreckels was seventy years old, and his years of greatest power in Hawaii (1876-1886) were over. He made one last attempt at a political comeback just after the Revolution of 1893, when he tried to restore Queen Liliuokalani to the throne. He continued to be a power on the mainland in sugar and other industries until his death in 1908.

The Maui Dynasty of Sugar

The growing of cane and its production into sugar attracted two enterprising missionary sons who became the partners and founders of the company named for them, Alexander & Baldwin. This company today (1978) is far and away the biggest private land owner on the island of Maui.

Samuel T. Alexander and Henry Perrine Baldwin, lifelong friends and business partners, were also brothers-in-law. Sam Alexander's sister, Emily, became Mrs. H. P. Baldwin, and these two became the progenitors of a new kind of Maui dynasty, the Maui dynasty of sugar.

"H. P."

Henry Perrine Baldwin, who "succeeded" Claus Spreckels as "Sugar King" of Maui, was an altogether different sort of man. Although they might be compared in terms of managerial and organizational skill and foresighted business acumen, the resemblance would end there.

Baldwin, still referred to on Maui sixty-seven years after his death as "H. P.", was the son of the medical missionary who came to Hawaii with the Fourth Company in 1830. He was born at Lahaina in 1842, and it was at Lahaina where the Alexander and Baldwin families became close friends.

As the family grew, so grew the powerful control of sugar lands and related industry. At the same time, the political power of the heads of the companies also grew strong.

Baldwin was the most important man on Maui during three, and perhaps four, decades from 1870 to his death in 1911. He and Alexander saw the possibilities in sugar which could be achieved in Maui's dry central plains only if large quantities of water were available to irrigate the cane. Together they built the Hamakua ditch and brought the water in quantity from the rainy windward slopes of Haleakala to irrigate their East Maui fields.

The Maliko Gulch

Sam Alexander, speaking of their plans for the Hamakua Ditch, wrote: "The Maliko gulch . . . is by far the most formidable gulch we will have to contend with. It is 300 feet deep and 800 feet broad and the sides precipitous and consisting of solid rock. I propose to pipe the water across the gulch. Have a pipe made of boiler iron and riveted about eighteen inches in diameter, which ought to be, I suppose, about 1/10 inches thick at the top of the gulch and increase in thickness up to 3/10 inches at the bottom of the gulch. This pipe I would propose to dub well with hot tar and pitch. The length of the pipe which I propose to put across the Maliko gulch will be just 1,100 feet."

Sam Alexander planned the historic ditch in all its details; Baldwin completed it, demonstrating immense personal courage along the way. In March, 1876, only a few months before, "H.P." lost his right arm in an accident at his mill near Paia. Showing an associate the uneven gap between the rollers which crush the cane, he put his right hand through the opening. The machinery was still turned on and before the gears could be reversed, his arm was caught and crushed to the elbow.

"H.P." took a stiff shot of brandy and coolly sent a rider miles down the mountain to fetch a doctor. The horse died from the exertion; Baldwin's arm was amputated at the shoulder that afternoon, and he almost immediately began learning to eat, write, and even play the organ at the Makawao Church with his left hand. Soon he went back to work even harder on the plantation and especially on the new ditch.

The problem of crossing the Maliko gulch was further complicated by the refusal of the workers to lower themselves over the cliff and into the deep ravine. "H.P." again demonstrated his courage. Clutching a rope with his legs and one arm, he swung 300 feet down into the gulch. The workers, shamed, followed his example. He is said to have repeated his demonstration each day until the gulch had been spanned.

H. P. Baldwin became active in politics and was elected to the Legislature of the Hawaii Territory in 1887. He belonged to the Reform Party ("Damned Missionaries") which favored constitutional monarchy. A few very old people can recall the great *luau* which "H.P." gave in honor of Queen Liliuokalani in the kukui grove in Iao Valley.

Others can recall how "H.P." "jumped the gun" when the United States annexed Hawaii in 1898. He had switched to the Republic after the fall of the monarchy and was a delegate to the founding convention. To celebrate the annexation, "H.P." threw a huge *luau*. The annexation was delayed by twenty-four hours, but, as news travelled slowly in that day, he was ahead of schedule by twenty-four hours so that it was after the party that his guests learned that they had been the very first to celebrate!

H. P. Baldwin was a religious man and was recognized for his integrity. Once he prayed for rain to save his first plantation, promising to give of every earning some portion to the Lord's work. It rained, and "H.P." kept his promise. He became very rich and his benefactions were numerous, though most often done quietly and without publicity. He rebuilt the old church at Lahaina and contributed to other churches. He built schools on Maui, donating a large building fully furnished at his own expense to Maunaolu Seminary. He built a dormitory for young boys at the leper colony at Kalapapa on Molokai. He died at Makawao, still president of A & B, at sixty-eight.

Alexander and Baldwin was incorporated in 1900 and its history has been one of solid growth. Since 1900 there have been fifteen mergers and many acquisitions of land, mills, companies, a shipping line (Matson Navigation Company), shopping centers and residential developments. A & B has diversified its investments into other parts of the world and has entered the field of tourism in Hawaii with its expensive resort at Wailea on Maui. It has become a multimillion dollar giant, more an investing than an operating company. Its interests are worldwide, yet its major field of operation is still the island of Maui, and sugar is its base.

Sugar and Land

A & B's land holdings have grown from the original twelve acres in 1869 to 97,700 acres in 1975. On Maui, A & B owns

73,517 acres with 38,000 devoted to sugar including the mill sites at Paia and Puunene. In addition, the company owns 15,000 acres in watershed lands under the subsidiary, East Maui Irrigation Co., which controls seventy-four miles of ditches and tunnels. The Wailea resort consists of 1,500 acres, originally a Matson acquisition, which now includes two golf courses, hotels and condominiums on the island's leeward side.

A & B leases 8,300 acres of its Maui lands to others and approximately 11,700 acres are vacant and/or unproductive. Thus, Alexander & Baldwin is the largest private landowner on the island of Maui which adds up to a powerful position on an island where land is limited and its value is booming.

Pineapple

Pineapple has become an important economic crop in Hawaii. The luscious yellow fruit flourishes in the sunny plantations of Maui. The Baldwins discovered this while developing their great sugar lands on the island. A company called Baldwin Packers was acquired by "H.P." along with its lands at Kapalua on the northwest coast of Maui. Baldwin Packers eventually became Maui Pineapple Company, the largest producer of pineapple on Maui. Its development was watched over carefully by J. Walter Cameron who had married Frances Baldwin, granddaughter of "H.P." Taking over Maui Pineapple, of which A & B owned controlling interest, he led the Maui company as it developed over the 1950's and 1960's. On his father's retirement, Colin C. Cameron became manager for A & B, then resigned from Maui Pineapple as a struggle for its control ensued. In a surprise move, a multimillion dollar deal in which the Camerons traded A & B stock and cash for controlling stock in the pineapple company, the Camerons won control. Colin became president, the name was changed to Maui Land & Pineapple Company, and the management began the development of an elaborate resort complex at Kapalua. A golf course, a hotel, and condominium apartments were built on company lands surrounding three of Maui's prettiest beaches.

The first group of apartments were sold out in 1976 before they were built for an average price of $115,000 leasehold.

In February 1977, the newest condominium offerings, the Golf Villas, not yet built, were placed on sale. All of them sold on the first day at prices ranging from $95,000 to $173,500 leasehold.

Sugar and Pineapple, 1977

Sugar has been grown and processed nearly everywhere on Maui. Hana, at the eastern end, was once a prosperous plantation and mill, as was Kipahulu beyond Hana. Sugar was grown high above Makena at Ulupalakua. There once was a mill at Olowalu, and ruins of abandoned sugar mills are found at all these places. At Hamakuapoko the high stone walls of the ruined mill are only held up by the aerial roots of the banyan trees which have split the old mill apart.

Of the many plantations once flourishing on Maui but three remain. These are Pioneer Mill Company, Wailuku Sugar Company and Hawaiian Commercial and Sugar Company. Each is a totally owned subsidiary of one of the Big Five. Pioneer is owned by American Factors (AMFAC) and operates on the west side in and around Lahaina where its fields and mill are located.

Wailuku is owned by C. Brewer & Company, and Hawaiian Commercial & Sugar is owned by Alexander & Baldwin.

During 1977, Maui's three plantations produced 265,000 tons of sugar. Of this total, Hawaiian Commercial & Sugar produced 187,678 tons. Pioneer Mill Company produced 49,756 tons, and Wailuku Sugar Company produced 27,743 tons, a slight decrease from 1976. The average yield by these companies was eleven tons per acre.

One of the problems the sugar companies face is the water supply. Hawaiian Commercial & Sugar uses an average of three hundred million gallons a day, and, due to drought conditions in the winter of 1977-78, the supply of water was down. Nevertheless, HC&S and Pioneer both improved crop production in 1977.

This improvement was partly due to a new technique for irrigating the sugar fields. It is the drip irrigation system which carries the water to the roots of the cane by means of plastic tubing which can be run across flat fields instead of the furrowed fields. The water is released slowly to the roots and results in such improved efficiency of use that the plantations turned from the older irrigation systems and began installing the drip system. HC&S by 1978 had converted over 9,000 acres to drip irrigation, and the other companies followed suit. The new system is so much more efficient that all three companies are increasing their acreages in sugar and making savings of about $75 per acre per year in the water and maintenance costs.

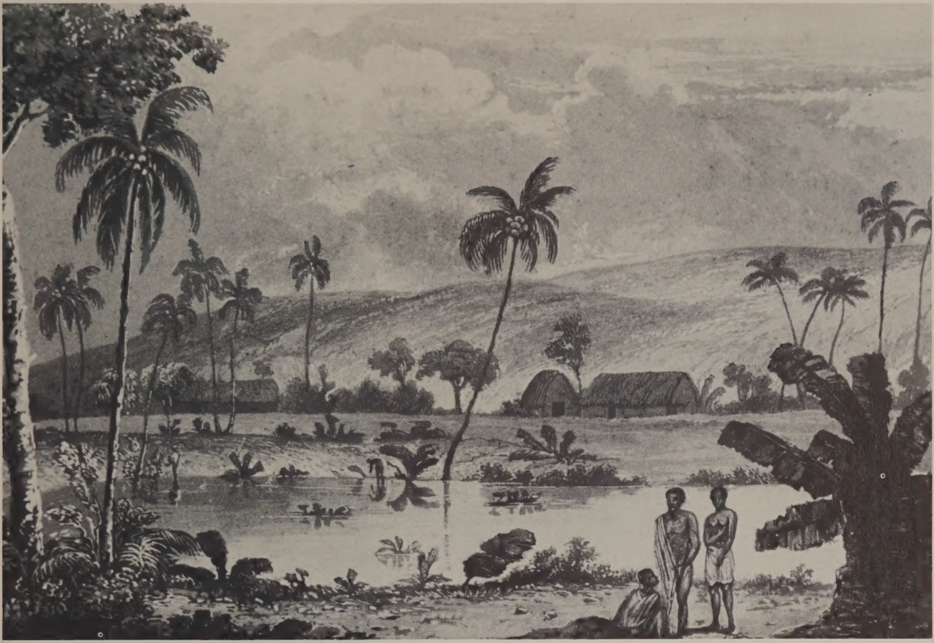
Though for a hundred years a flourishing and profitable business on Maui, the fluctuating price of sugar presents a problem. In 1974, there was a boom in the sugar market, and the companies paid their workers with generous bonuses averaging $1,000 each. Then in 1976 the price dropped and, under pressure from the planters, Hawaii's representatives in Congress pressed the Government for support.

The Federal Government has paid a total of 53.3 million dollars to Hawaiian sugar companies in an attempt to support the price of the 1977 sugar crop at 13.5 cents a pound. The final payment on the 1977 crop totalled more than $2.5 million, according to Congressman Cecil Heftel in a statement in February 1978.

Of this total paid to fifteen plantations, HC&S received $458,777, Pioneer Mill Company $121,881, and Wailuku Sugar Company $67,951. The president of A & B stated that "price support payments authorized by the Department of Agriculture contributed approximately one-third of the company's net income" for 1977.

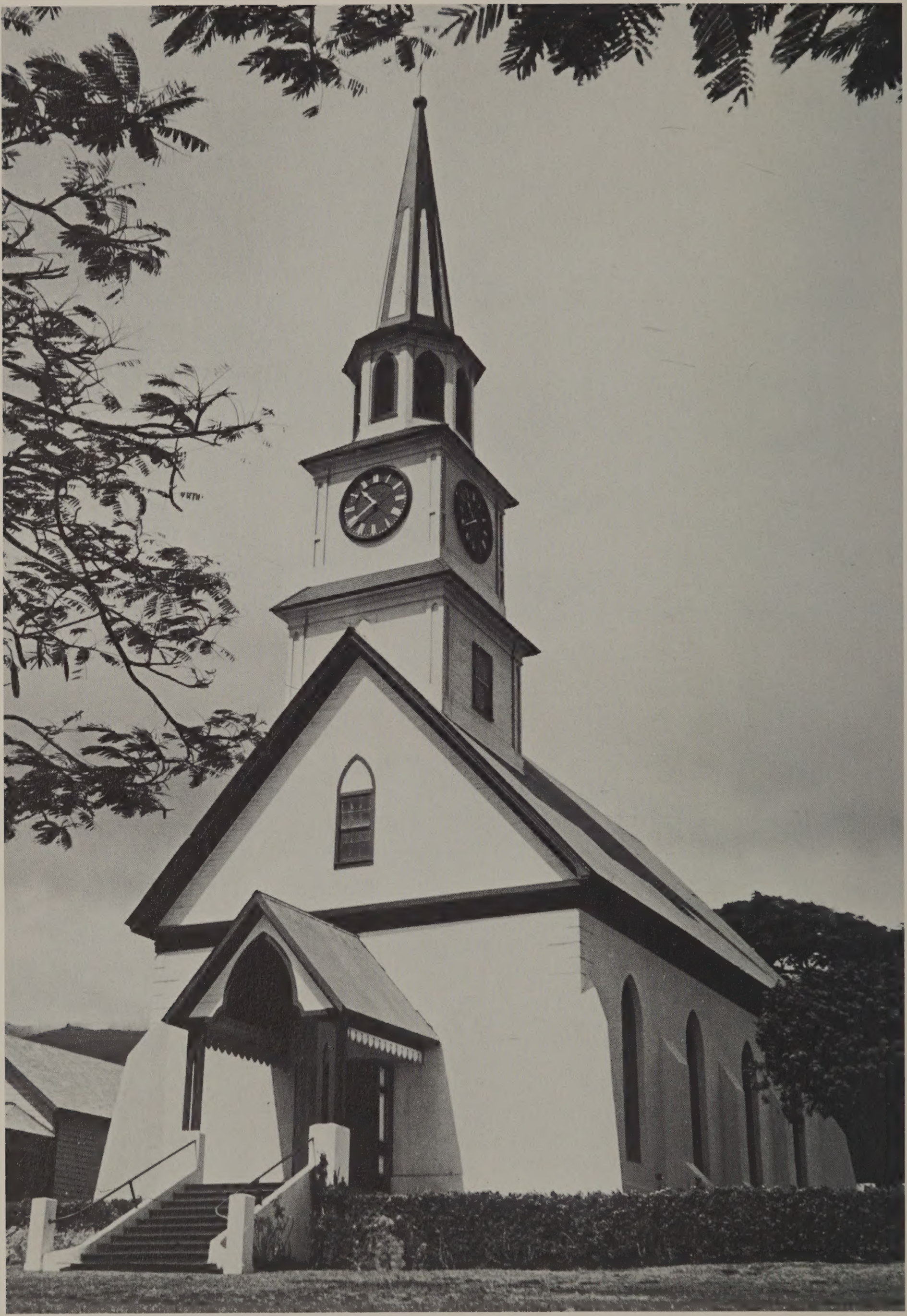
In the early 1970's, gloomy predictions for the future of Hawaiian pineapple were forecast. They have not proved out, and pineapple in the late 1970's was healthier than ever. In 1976, Maui Pineapple Company had become the world's largest supplier of private or buyer's brand pineapple and pineapple juice. It is the largest producer on Maui among a number of small independent planters.

Sugar is breaking even; pineapple is making profits, but obviously the name of the game on Maui is—land and resort development.

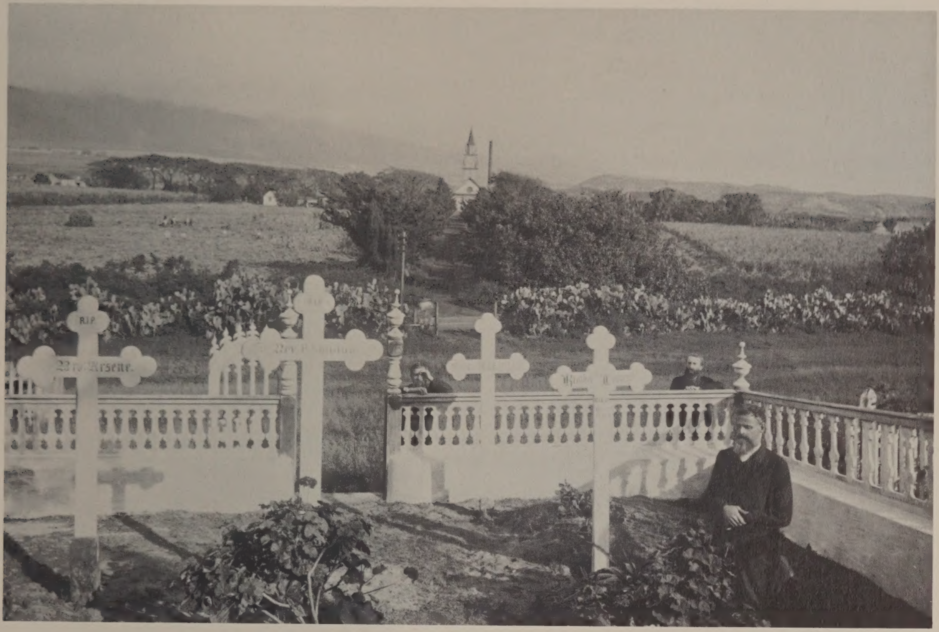


Old Lahaina. *Honolulu Academy of Arts.*

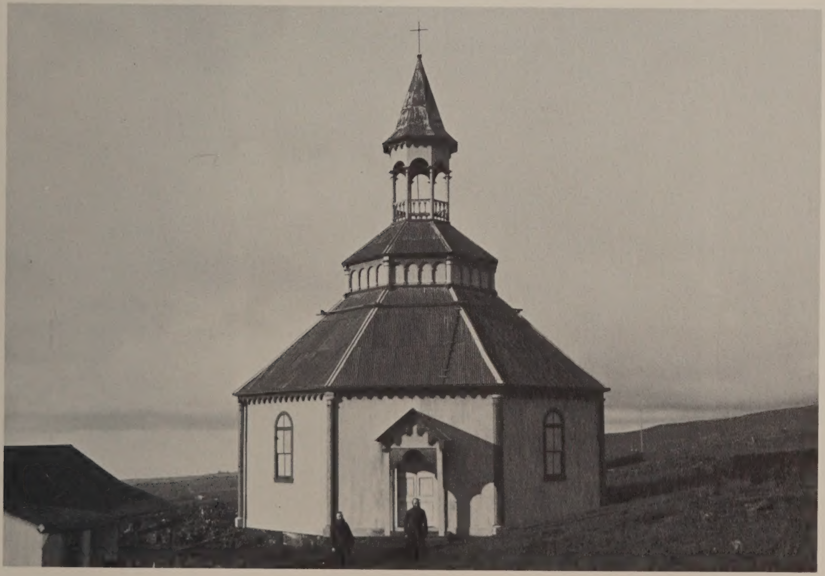
Edward Bailey, missionary teacher and sugar planter, with his family. *Mission Houses Museum, Honolulu.*



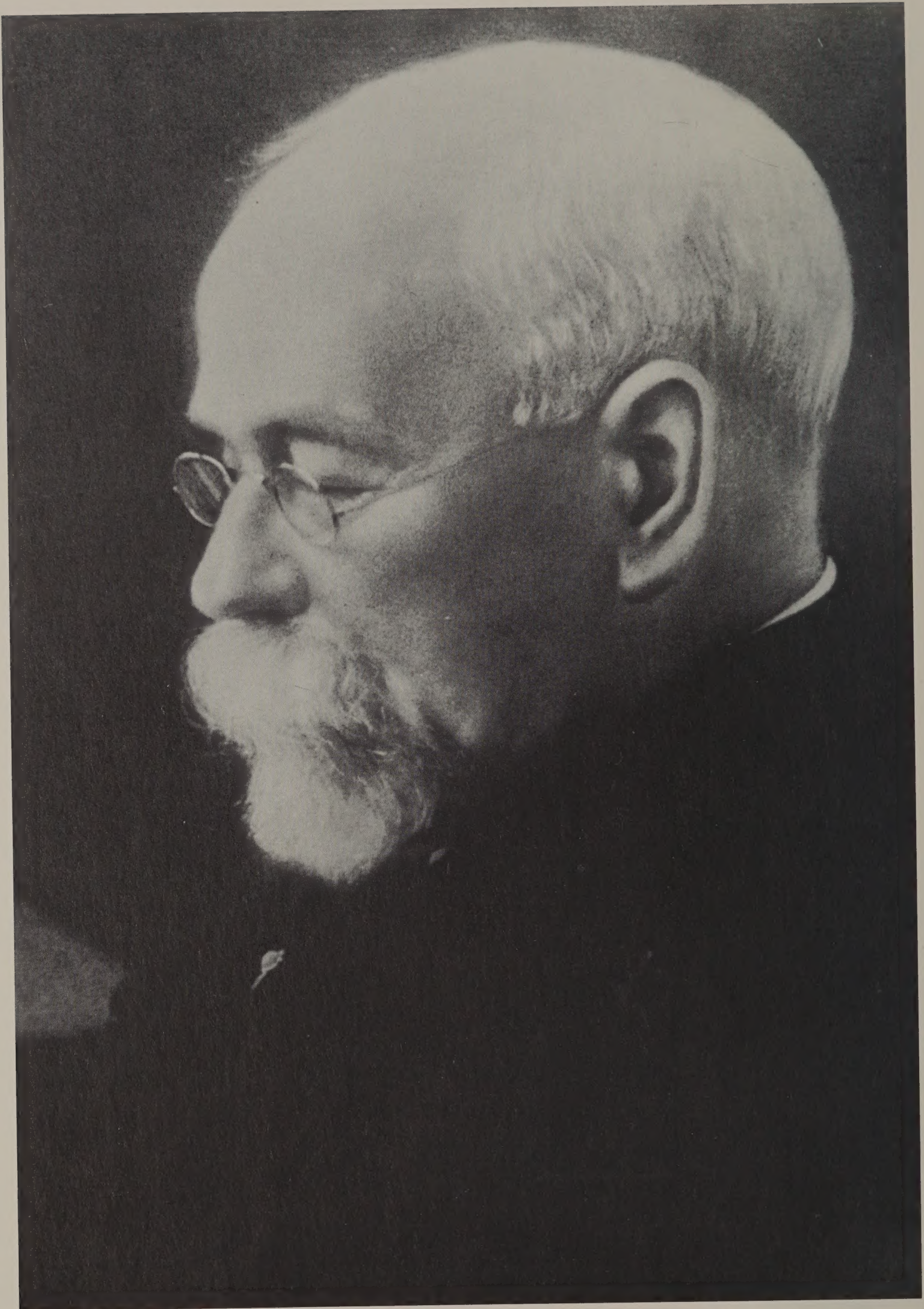
The Ka-'ahu-manu Church, named for the Queen who attended services here in 1832, is a landmark on Maui. The present church was built in 1876 under the supervision of Edward Bailey. It was restored in 1976. *Photograph by Russ Beach, Maui.*



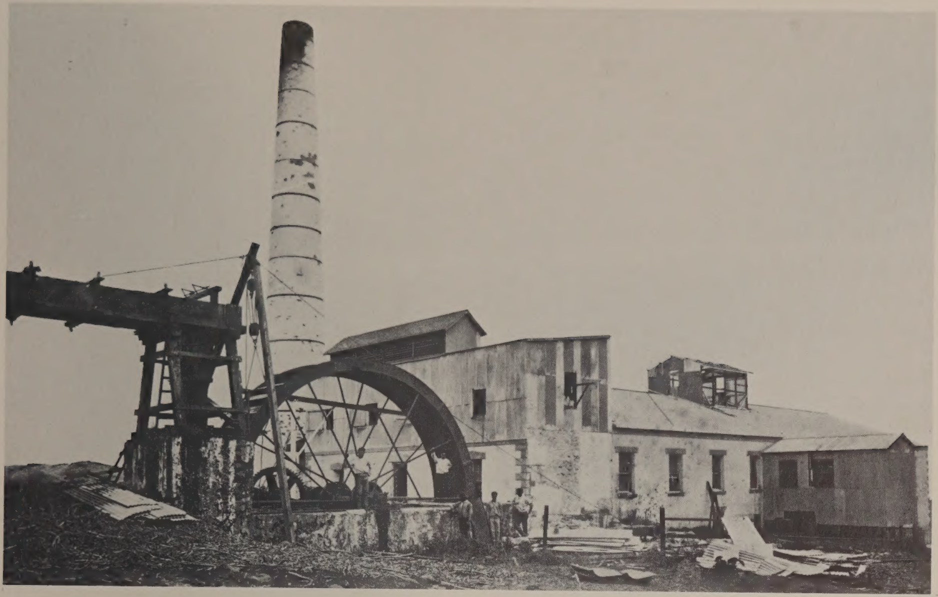
The Roman Catholic cemetery at Wailuku, with St. Anthony Church in the background, about 1887. It was from this church that Father Damien started his mission to the lepers at Molokai. *Brother Bertram Collection, St. Louis-Chaminade, Honolulu.*



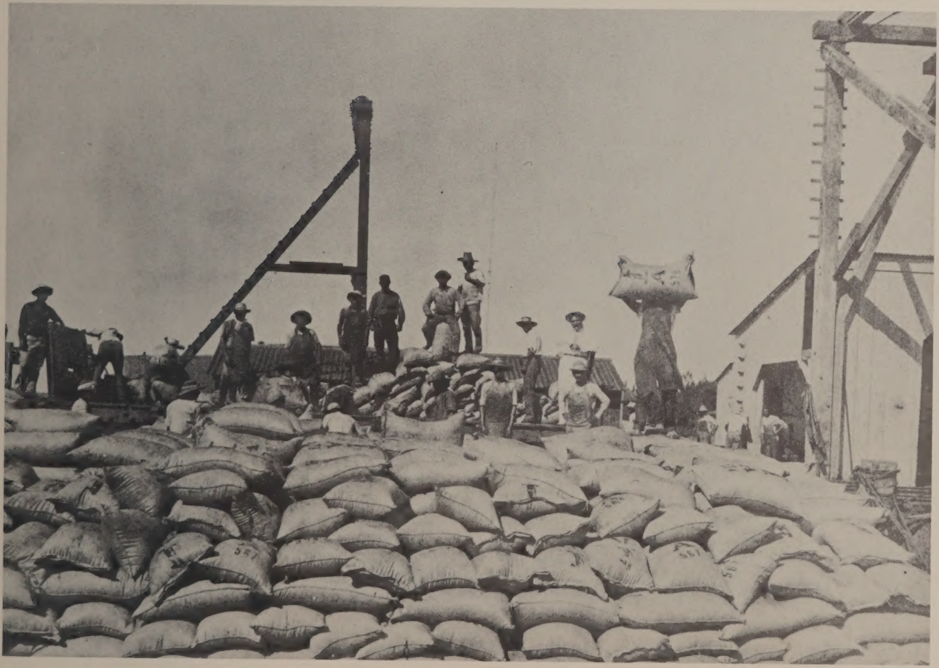
Church of the Holy Ghost at Kula. *Brother Bertram Collection, St. Louis—Chaminade, Honolulu.*



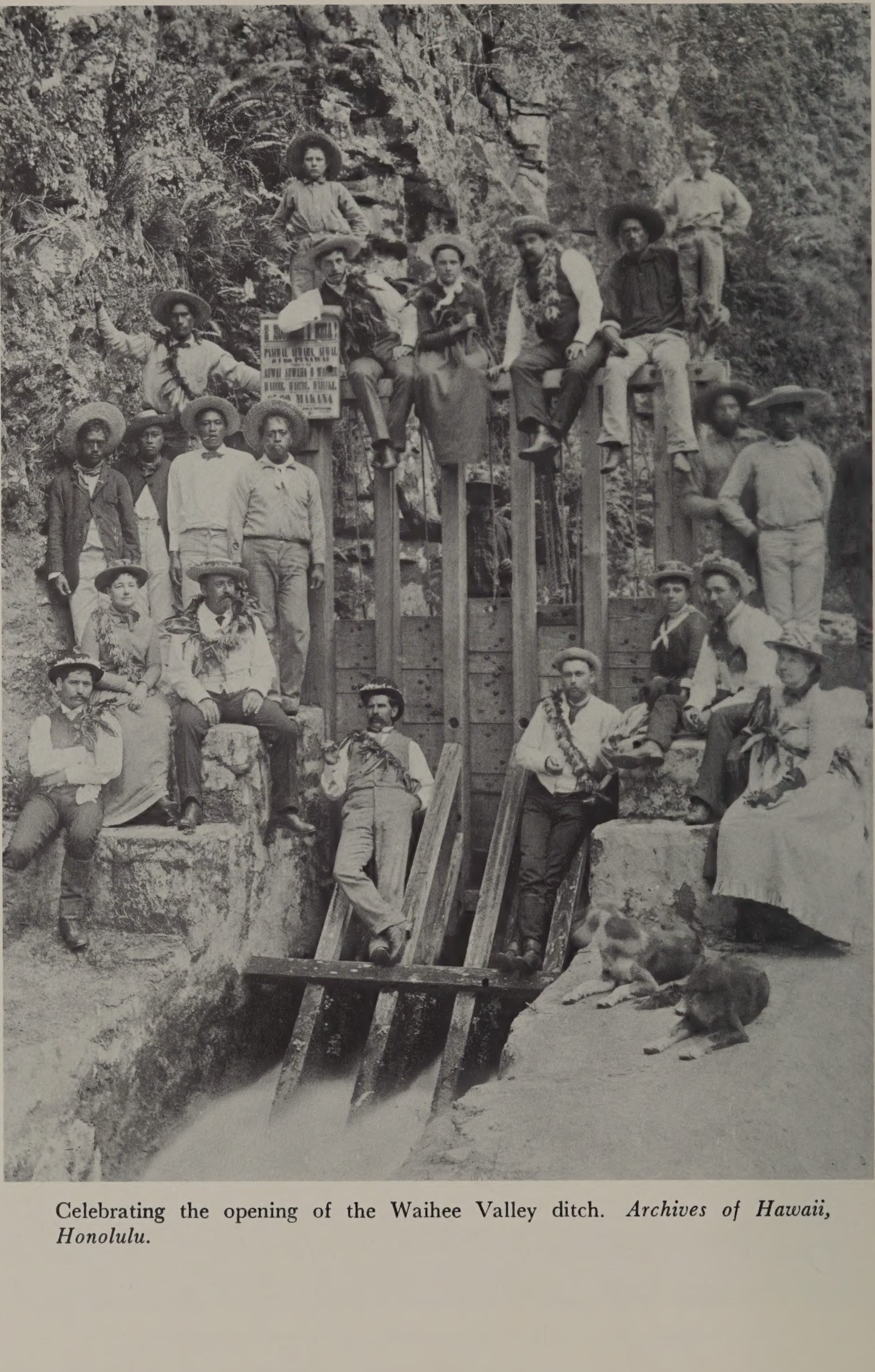
Henry Perrine Baldwin, founder of a dynasty of sugar. *Alexander & Baldwin, Inc.*



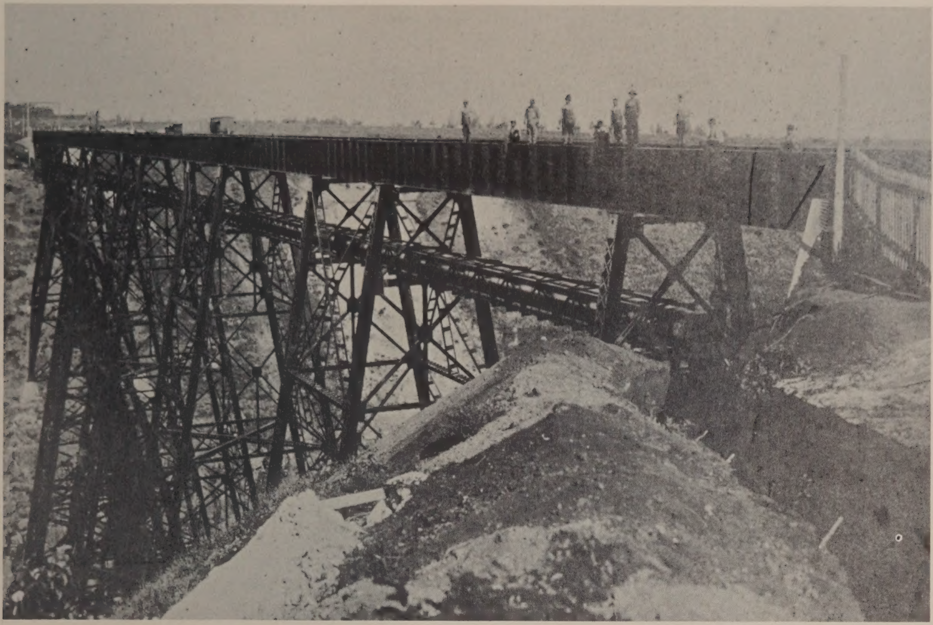
Wailuku Sugar Mill, 1867. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



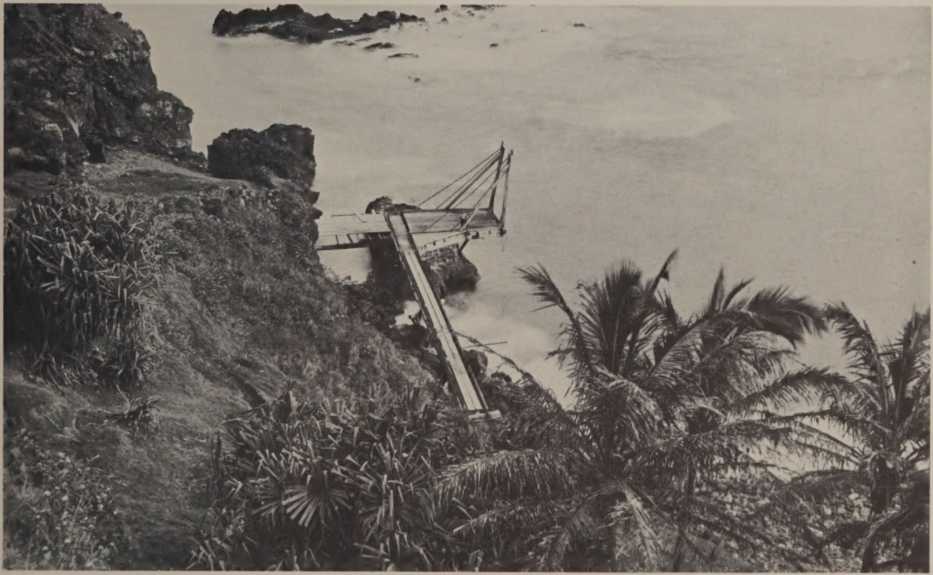
Loading sugar at Kahului. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*


PANIWAI, AUWAHA, AUWAI
AUWAI AUWAHA O WAIHEE
MAKANA

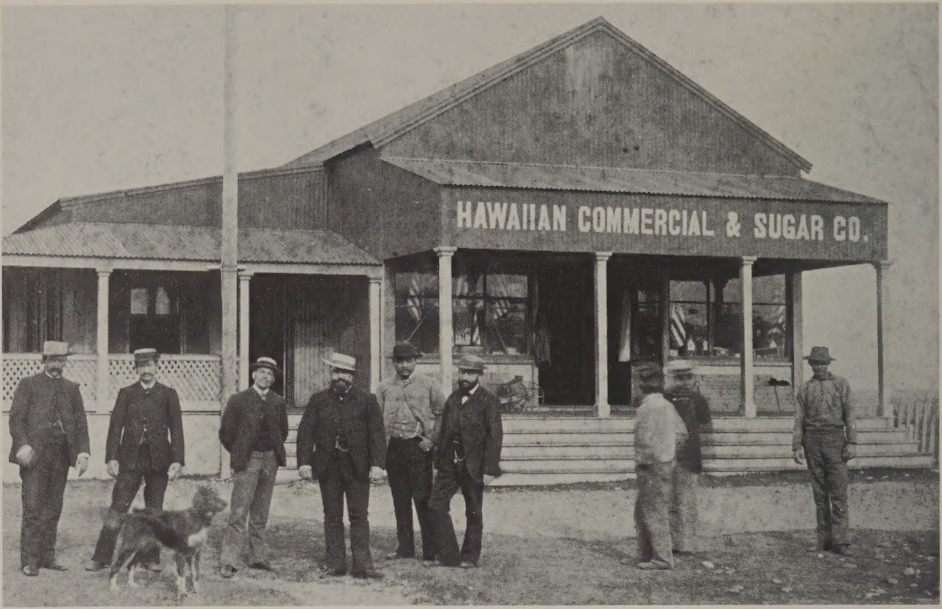
Celebrating the opening of the Waihee Valley ditch. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



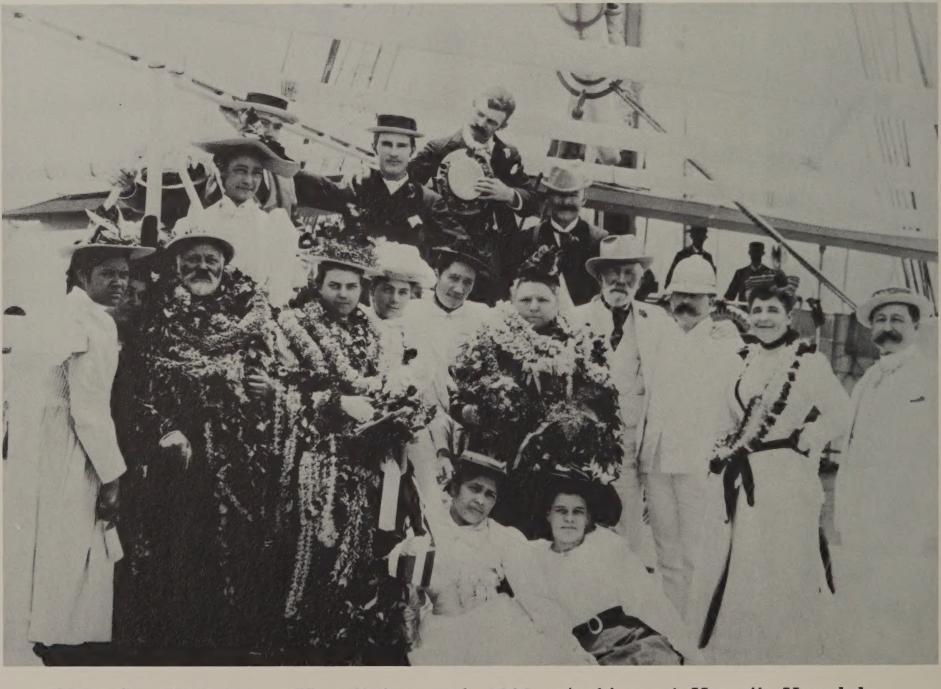
The railroad bridge and water pipe over the Maliko Gulch was a marvel of engineering in its day. *Hawaiian Commercial & Sugar Company.*



Sugar cane landing at Kipahulu, Maui. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*


HAWAIIAN COMMERCIAL & SUGAR CO.

"Sugar King" Claus Spreckels in front of the H.C. & S. store at Spreckelsville. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



Claus Spreckels leaves Hawaii for good, 1898. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

9

FROM MANY LANDS: NEW PEOPLES

In which expansion of the sugar industry and the decline of the native population lead to the importation of laborers from China, the Azores, Japan, and the Philippines to work for the haole planters.

> It seemed that the population problem as well as the labor problem, could only be solved by immigration from abroad, either voluntary or assisted. *Kuykendall,* The Hawaiian Kingdom.

Two factors which affected the population, and along with it the labor problem in the islands, were the continuous decrease in the native Hawaiian population and the growth of agricultural enterprises described in the previous chapter. Hawaii's total population probably reached its lowest point about 1875 but began its long upward climb several years later, as shown by the census of 1878. But the Hawaiian and part-Hawaiian segment of the population did not reach its lowest point until long after 1878.

Statistics of those years show that far from being unsuited to plantation labor, or considered inefficient workers, Hawaiian labor was considered the best obtainable by many planters. As late as 1869 some plantations employed Hawaiian labor exclusively. Kuykendall quotes from several sources, one of whom commented in the 1870 report of the Hawaiian Immigration Society as follows: "Whilst the population has largely diminished, there are probably as many or more Hawaiians working on plantations today than ever before, and doing it cheerfully of their own free will. . . . The true reason why there is a dearth of Hawaiian labor is the increase of the planting interests from some 2,000,000 of pounds in nine or ten years to 18 or 20,000,000, requiring from eight to ten times as many men now as then; also the additional fact that more Hawaiian seamen are employed now than then. . . ." This source found more Hawaiians employed in such labor than ever before, and statistics for that year (1873) showed that out of 3,786 laborers employed on thirty-five plantations, 2,627 were Hawaiian men and 364 were Hawaiian women. "The Hawaiian men thus employed were more than 50 per cent of the able-bodied native male population of the Kingdom."

Nevertheless, the population decline was palpable and became a matter of public concern of the kings and their advisers, of the Hawaiian legislature, and of the sugar planters. There was continuous public debate and various plans were put forward in the sixties and seventies. Out of the numerous proposals, immigration of labor from China and Japan to fill the population and labor gap seemed to many to be the most feasible plan, and it was from these two countries that the largest contingents of immigrants came, though supplemented by Caucasians, including Portuguese, and Filipinos, Koreans, Puerto Ricans, Germans, Pacific Islanders and many others.

"What may be called the 'reciprocity period' [1876-1900] witnessed a remarkable change in the size and character of the population of the Hawaiian islands."

In that period the population rose from 55,500 in 1876 to 154,000 in 1900. The following table shows the changes in percentages:

	1876	*1900*
Hawaiian & Part-Hawaiian	89.2%	26.0%
Caucasian	6.3	17.5
Oriental	4.5	56.5
	100.0%	100.0%

Although it has often been said that the sugar industry gave Hawaii its multiracial population, the steadily decreasing Hawaiian population was crucial in bringing about the change. If it had *increased* at a normal rate, it could have supplied most of the labor needs of the expanding sugar industry. Actually, at the time of King Kalakaua's accession to the throne, the decline was a basic fact of tragic significance irrespective of the labor needs of sugar. These happened to be satisfactory as the sugar industry was in a period of slow growth at that time.

The decrease of the native population was changed to an increase, and this was done over a relatively short period of years in human history. "The decrease of the native population was ultimately changed to an increase but only by the process of mingling with Hawaiian blood that of Caucasians and Orientals." Although persons of all-Hawaiian blood continued to decrease, it was and is still, a hundred years later, the combination of all-Hawaiian and part-Hawaiian groups which showed a numerical increase. In 1978, it is this group, mostly part-Hawaiian but considering themselves "Hawaiian," which is the fastest growing segment of the islands' population.

But in the 1870's, it seemed that "the population problem, as well as the labor problem, could only be solved by immigration from abroad, either voluntary or assisted."

The picture is pretty much the same for Maui, where depopulation had become acute by the seventies while the sugar plantations increased in number and extent with more urgent needs for labor. Maui's sandalwood trade, followed by the influx of the whalers, the gold rush in California, and the needs for supplies as well as for manpower, added to the problem of the sugar planters.

This chapter contains the stories of several families who came from distant lands in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries to work on the sugar plantations of Maui. Perhaps through the eyes of these people, who in the 1970's were retired and living on Maui, some insight into the lives of the immigrants may be gained.

The Chinese

It is believed that the first Chinese to see Hawaii were the fifty carpenters and smiths from Canton who accompanied Captain John Meares to Nootka Sound on the American northwest coast. In 1788 Meares' ships, the *Felice* and *Iphigenia,* were in Hawaiian waters with the small schooner *North West American,* which the Chinese artisans had built for him at Nootka Sound. The *Iphigenia* and *North West American* wintered for four months in the islands and while there Kamehameha visited the ships and requested that two of the Chinese carpenters be left with him to build for him a schooner similar to the *North West American.* This was refused although Chinese carpenters, again at the King's request, did build a mounting for a swivel gun which they attached to one of Kamehameha's double canoes.

In 1789, Captain Simon Metcalf had a crew aboard the *Eleanora* which included forty-five Chinese, one of whom may have gone ashore after the massacre on Maui with John Young at Kealakekua Bay. If that were the case he would have been detained with Young by Kamehameha and thus could have been the "one Chinaman" noted among eleven foreigners in Kamehameha's retinue by Vancouver five years later.

Although a number of very successful Chinese sugar masters and merchants were well established in Hawaii in the first half of the nineteenth century, the first contract field laborers arrived on Maui from Hong Kong in 1852. There were one hundred and seventy-five men, mostly Hakka from Kwangtung Province. They came on five-year contracts to the sugar plantations. Their pay was $3 a month plus passage, room and board. They were a hardy people who had survived great hardship in China, and they were looking for a better life for themselves and their families. Other waves arrived in the forties and again in the nineties, most of whom intended to return to China but many stayed on.

"Uncle Shinn"

Among the Chinese who arrived on Maui was a fifteen-year-old boy named Shing Sam Shin. He was one of a number of Chinese who worked as farm labor in upland Maui at Kula on land leased from the Crown. Shing Sam Shin worked hard and saved up enough money to send to China for a bride, Liu Moi. A son was born whom they named Ten Sung Shinn.

T. S. Shinn, known to thousands of Maui Boy Scouts and friends as "Uncle Shinn," elected to stay on Maui when his parents decided to return. His story is one of hard work and a successful career and life. Though Uncle Shinn's career has been more successful than most, his life, especially his early life, as he told it with gusto, was typical of many of the Chinese who became such an important part of the multiracial society of Hawaii.

"Like all Chinese, my father came to Maui to better himself. When they arrived all they had were the shirts on their backs. My father's people had been farmers in Hong Kong. We grew our own food and sent money to poor relatives in Hong Kong.

"It was really hard. I never wore shoes until I was about ten years old. We were sort of hardy stock." The land was hard to work and the rains were not dependable. Drought conditions were common. But the Chinese who lived and worked around Keokea enjoyed the healthiest climate to be found almost anywhere; they also enjoyed themselves and became good friends and neighbors of the Hawaiians living there.

Approximately eighty Chinese families moved to Kula between 1880 and 1910. By 1900, there were approximately 700 Chinese living there. For a period of thirty to forty years Kula supported a thriving community which included English and Chinese schools, Christian churches, a Hung Men Society, gambling joints and opium dens, general stores, and dozens of operating farms and cattle ranches.

"In those days we all had oxens. It took a full day to go from Kula to Kahului." Until he was grown Shinn worked on the farm, went to school and, after school, "we had to chase the chickens out of the corn."

Once he had graduated from Keokea, Shinn had to leave Kula for further education. He moved in with a relative in Paia whence he could take the train each day to Wailuku, where he enrolled in St. Anthony's School, at that time noted for turning out businessmen. One of his teachers at St. Anthony's was Manuel, the father of Mayor Elmer Cravalho. He then went to work for the Kahului railroad, at the same time helping out as a translator for Ah Fook, who founded the supermarket by that name in Kahului in 1917.

In 1923 Shinn went to work for a company which became MDG Supply. In 1978, though "semi-retired" at 78, T. S. Shinn was still vice president, treasurer and secretary of MDG Supply and still involved in many a charitable enterprise on Maui and, indeed, in Hong Kong and elsewhere. He once said that "a lot of the big businessmen in Honolulu are Maui boys. One reason they didn't stay was because they weren't allowed to own land here. It was easier to get a farm on Oahu."

"Uncle Shinn's" parents, like so many of the original Chinese immigrants, returned to China. Their children stayed. When he was asked about the hard work in his younger years he said: "I enjoyed my work. My attitude is 'where there is love, there is no burden.' " It is an attitude that well served T. S. Shinn and many another of Chinese ancestry who, in turn, have served the community of Maui.

Sun Yat-sen on Maui

It is an interesting yet little-known fact that the "Father of the Chinese Revolution" was a frequent visitor to the village of Kula, Maui, in the eighteen eighties. His older brother, Sun Ah Mi, was a prominent rancher there, having leased or bought some eight hundred acres of land and five hundred head of cattle. He was the only coffee planter in the area.

Sun Yat-sen first visited the islands in 1879 and graduated from Iolani School in Honolulu in 1882 at the age of sixteen. He returned to China to study medicine but, after several years, journeyed again to Hawaii to seek support for the revolution. For their safety, Dr. Sun moved his wife and family to Maui where they lived with Sun Mi and his family.

Sun Mi had obtained for his brother a false birth certificate which gave his birthplace as Oahu and his domicile as "Kula, island of Maui," where he was listed as a physician. This enabled the Chinese revolutionary leader to travel more freely in the United States and, as a United States citizen, to be free of harassment by the Manchus.

Historians differ as to the support which Sun Yat-sen obtained from the Chinese in Hawaii. Some say that the revolution received minimal and inconsistent support while others argue that Hawaii was the mainstay of overseas support for the Chinese revolution and that thousands of dollars were donated to the cause by the Chinese in Hawaii.

The site of the Sun Mi ranch is known, but the ranch house and buildings are long since gone. Sun Yat-sen made many visits there in the early years of this century and whenever visiting Kula was consulted for medical advice. In 1975 a lady who lives in Wailuku, Mrs. Pak Hoy Wong, recalled that she received a vaccination by Dr. Sun, administered with a bamboo needle.

"Mrs. Sun Yat-sen and Mrs. Sun Mi became regular guests of the Rev. and Mrs. Chong How Fo every Christmas: 'They came to Kula on horseback, a Hawaiian lad with them. They had bound feet, you see . . . Christmas Eve they came . . . They spent one night with us every Christmas for eight or nine years.

After that they moved to Kahului for a little while. It was too far for them to come. . . .'

"When word reached Kula that the 1912 revolution was a success, the town broke out in celebration. China had taken a giant and historic step forward, and Dr. Sun Yat-sen, a familiar and respected personality in Kula, had become the Republic's first leader."

After 1911, some of the Chinese farmers in Kula were able to buy their lands, but before this arrangement was concluded, a number of Kula farmers saw their land divided into homesteads and leased to others. These farmers were forced to move elsewhere in the islands.

Then, in 1918, some forty families left Kula because their farms were sold to a wealthy rancher. The leases to the land had not expired, but the farmers were unaware of their right to challenge the eviction.

"The families who managed to remain in Kula continued to farm the land and engage in community activities, but for various reasons, family after family departed Kula and the Chinese community never re-attained the level of bustling activity it had enjoyed in the early 1900's.

"Among the reasons which had prompted the exodus of many Kula families during the 1910's and 20's were: severe drought which ruined crops and killed livestock, soil which was reaching depletion level after years of harvesting and tilling, lack of educational opportunities for their children, and loss of land due to parceling of homesteads.

"Most of these people moved to Honolulu, where the day was not as endless and the opportunities were more varied. Others moved to Haiku or other parts of Maui or to other islands."

The Portuguese

In the Peabody Museum of Salem, Massachusetts, there is found the logbook of a whale ship named the *Massachusetts.* It is an interesting document in Maui history as that ship visited Maui in 1791, and the log contains a complete description of the Olowalu Massacre with some details not observed in other accounts.

One detail of this sort is the naming of the Portuguese seaman* whose murder led to the terrible massacre. The log gives his name as Antony. He was assigned to guard the cutter of the *Eleanora* the night she was stolen by Hawaiians off the village at La Pérouse Bay. He cried out in alarm and was killed. Some of his bones were later returned to Captain Metcalf with the keel of the cutter.

The unfortunate Antony may have been the first Portuguese to visit Maui. Many more were to follow on the whale ships, so many of which carried Portuguese seamen from the Azores. These islands in the Atlantic were one of the whaling grounds in the nineteenth century and whale ships of British and American ownership often recruited able seamen there, some of them experienced whalemen.

But it was not until the 1890's that Portuguese in any significant numbers came to Hawaii. They were brought in as much to strengthen the declining population as they were to labor in the fields, and the great difference between Portuguese immigration and the Chinese and Japanese was that a large percentage brought their wives and families, thus clearly intending to stay.

Bringing immigrants from the Azores was a more expensive procedure than in the cases of the Orientals who had come earlier. The contracts were usually for three years, not counting the time spent aboard ship (about six months).

---

* Other accounts have described the sailor as "a Manila man."

An unmarried man was paid $16 a month for ten hours' work a day in the field; twelve hours a day in the sugar house. They were furnished with houses, bedding and medical attention. A married man with one child was paid $18 a month; a man with more than one child was paid $20.

Portuguese (17,500 were recruited between 1878 and 1887 from the Azores and Madeira Islands) were regarded by the planters as a desirable supplement to the Chinese laborers and by the government as effective rebuilders of the declining Hawaiian population. Approximately one quarter of the total immigration of Portuguese occurred between 1906 and 1913, although a considerable number of them were later lost to California.

Although the total number of Chinese imported to Hawaii was more than twice that of Portuguese, by 1910 the Portuguese population had exceeded the Chinese.

Although the Portuguese on Maui are engaged in every type of business and industry, and in every part of the island, perhaps the most recognizable group are those living in Maui's so-called Upcountry where ranching and farming are the principal occupations. Portuguese residents there center their activities around the ranching town of Makawao, its Catholic St. Joseph's Church, and at Kula which is the location of the beautiful octagonal church whose altar was brought from Portugal itself.

Although large numbers of Portuguese have merged with people of other racial groups, in the post World War II period there has been a renaissance of ethnic pride and a revival of the ancient culture which their ancestors knew in the homeland.

Alfred "Flako" Boteilho

Among the Portuguese arriving in Hawaii in the 1890's was a young couple who brought with them their two children —one born on the ship during a six-months' voyage from the Azores. They were Mariano Boteilho and his wife, Antonia. Like those who accompanied them, they were brought to Hawaii by the Hawaiian Sugar Planters Association. An H.S.P.A. agent met them at Honolulu and, assigning them to Maui, handed each man $10, a loan that was to be repaid at the rate of $1 a month. Mariano was assigned to the HC&S plantation where he worked in the fields, becoming a luna, or supervisor, in 1910. Like many other men from the Azores, he stayed with the plantation after his contract was fulfilled, although it was possible to leave.

Mariano and Antonia were the parents of Alfred "Flako" Boteilho, who, after a lifetime of working on the plantation, retired to Paia in 1975. In a retrospective interview which appeared in the Mayor's Bicentennial Report (1976), "Flako" and his wife, Laura, recalled those early days of life growing up and working on a Maui plantation.

"My father and the others cleared the land for the first fields with their hands," Boteilho said with a fierce pride that continues to mark Maui's descendants of those early immigrants. In those days most of Maui's population lived in plantation camps that were set up along ethnic lines. Each group of workers, including the less numerous Koreans, Puerto Ricans, and Spaniards, had its own camp or section of a camp.

Although mostly living separately, the various ethnic groups all worked together. Their commonality was the hot sun and the straining backs in the fields. It was a commonality that bridged language, cultural, and religious differences. It was a commonality that formed the sinews of Maui life.

Life in the camps for the Portuguese began when they first arrived. The houses were built and ready. At first there was only an oven for every five families. Later, individual families built their own ovens for baking the delicious round loaves of Portuguese bread so popular on Maui.

Mrs. Alfred Boteilho (Laura) pointed out that "you could save money if you raised your own food and were careful." The money saved was often used to buy a small plot of land in the Upcountry area that reminded the immigrants of their homeland. The company houses prepared for Portuguese occupation each had its own altar, and priests were on hand to greet the new arrivals. "Most of the Portuguese went straight from the boat to the church," Laura said. She added that, "A big reason the Portuguese came to Hawaii was because the children were promised schooling."

Work, the church, and the family. These were the centers of the Portuguese life on the plantation. That and pride, a pride that extended to the plantation itself.

"I feel that without sugar and agriculture, Hawaii would not be as progressive as it is. As far as I'm concerned, life on the plantation has been good to me. . . . The fact is I am employed by the best plantation in Hawaii and life has been beautiful," Boteilho said in an article printed after he had worked for the plantation for forty-eight years.

The Japanese

The story of Japanese immigration parallels that of the Portuguese in some respects, including the expectation that they would serve to revive the "dying native population." First, efforts to import Japanese laborers were made in 1868. The Japanese government did not approve, and only 148 persons of an expected 350 left the country for Hawaii. No further immigration occurred until 1885 when Japanese peasants, largely from the southern prefectures, began arriving in large numbers for plantation work. By 1900, the census listed 61,111 Japanese living in Hawaii. The planters seemed well pleased with these industrious and thrifty workers, but their cordiality and that of the public declined markedly as it became evident that the Japanese might constitute as much of a labor and population threat as the Chinese had a decade earlier.

"Despite a growing atmosphere of hostility to further immigration, Japanese laborers, to the number of nearly 110,000 within a single decade, were brought into the Territory after annexation and women and children continued to arrive until the passage of the Exclusion Act in 1924." Reaching a peak in 1920 when they constituted 42 per cent of the total, the proportion of Japanese in the total population declined in the thirties and by the sixties was about thirty per cent.

During their years in Hawaii, the Japanese rose from lowly plantation laborers who were severely discriminated against in the nineteenth century, to positions of prominence in the twentieth, especially as professionals in medicine, dentistry, education, the law, and business. They suffered the most far-reaching cultural changes as immigrants' children were educated in American schools and became acculturated as American citizens. They suffered the greatest strains in World War II as Japan cruelly attacked Hawaii at Pearl Harbor, and they emerged from that war, despite earlier suspicion and internment in concentration camps, as loyal and brave Americans. This was especially true of those young Nisei who served in the

Armed Forces of the United States with distinction and with heroism.

After the war, another dramatic turn of events in the history of the Japanese-Americans of Hawaii found them the leaders of a quiet revolution in which, through the constitutional means of the free election and the American system of government, they became the most powerful political element in Hawaii and achieved what seemed to people in Hawaii only a generation back as an utter impossibility. If it had even been considered in the past, the haole controlling element would have considered it a total disaster.

A remarkable haole was the instrument of this revolution in political power. His name was John Burns and his colleagues were George Aryoshi, who followed Burns as Governor in 1974, thus becoming the first Governor of Japanese descent; Dan Inouye, elected United States Senator for Hawaii in 1963, Spark Matsunaga elected in 1963 as Representative to Congress and elected Senator in 1977; Patsy Takemoto Mink, who served in Congress from 1964 to 1977 and in that year was appointed an Assistant Secretary of State at Washington. Mrs. Mink was born to Japanese parents in one of the camps for sugar workers at Upper Paia in central Maui.

Another child of Japanese immigrants, Tadaichi Fukunaga, was also born on the plantation at Paia. Mr. Fukunaga is the founder and president of Fuku Construction, Inc. of Wailuku. His story, like those of T. S. Shinn and Arthur Boteilho, illustrates some of the typical aspects of immigrant life on Maui.

Shoemon Fukunaga came from Japan paying his own way and without a contract. When he arrived he went to work for the plantation and was housed with other young men in a barracks-like dormitory.

In 1905 Shoemon returned to Japan to marry Sada Sato, returning to the plantation at Paia where their son, Tadaichi, was born. Shoemon went to work in the fields but one day while working in an irrigation ditch, "a haole man rode by and said, 'You're working hard but you're too small for the fields. You should come work in the mill.' "

For more than fifty years Shoemon Fukunaga worked in the Paia mill tending the sugar boiler. In his off hours he and other Japanese came into Wailuku to first build and later work at the Hongwanji Mission. In describing his father's life, Fukunaga said, "I don't think they had any real recreation. It was a lonely life."

When Tadaichi was still a baby his mother became ill and it was decided she would have to return to Japan to be cared for by the family there. Shoemon, who had had his family on Maui for eight years, went back to being a bachelor. He continued to work for a family he didn't have, finally returning to Japan in 1967.

His son was trapped in Japan by the immigration laws of 1924 but was able to return with his mother to Maui in 1931 at the age of nineteen.

Seeking education, Tadaichi Fukunaga went to school wherever he could afford it. He enrolled at St. Anthony's School but had to leave because of his marriage and the rules at the school which didn't allow married students. He was a teacher at the Japanese School until World War II closed the school, and Tadaichi went to work as a carpenter's helper.

"It was miserable; I worked for five years until 1946 and could not get past third class carpenter. A lot of the time they thought I was a spy from Japan because I taught in a Japanese school. During the war it was really a miserable life. There was the constant fear of arrest and internment, 'the knock on the door in the middle of the night.' "

Finally Tadaichi decided that his energy and determination, plus his experience in carpentry and a ninth grade course in bookkeeping were good background for the contracting business which he started with a very small amount of capital. In 1976 Tadaichi Fukunaga said, "Problems should be enjoyed because problems make you better. I do my best to avoid problems but still they come. Harder is better."

It is a philosophy that partly explains how Tadaichi Fukunaga came to found, own, and run one of the most progressive construction companies on Maui. It is also an important ingredient in the strength of the island's social and economic fabric.

The Filipinos

In 1907, Japan was closed as a source of laborers and several of the smaller ethnic groups were introduced to Hawaii after that, partly as foils to the large Japanese population. Nearly 6,000 Puerto Ricans had arrived in 1901, about 8,000 Koreans in 1904 and 1905, while an equal number of Spaniards had been recruited by 1913, though several thousand of these latter emigrated to California. Puerto Ricans remained and reproduced and still constitute an important, though small, segment of the Hawaiian population, having intermarried extensively.

The Filipinos were the last of the ethnic groups to enter the Territory, nearly 120,000 being imported as plantation laborers during the period 1907-1931. The strike of the Japanese workers in 1909 had given the planters a bad scare and also good reason to seek relief from the near monopoly of plantation labor by the Japanese.

It was no longer thought necessary to use immigration to solve the population problem, and Filipinos were recruited mainly for economic reasons, as is suggested by the extreme disproportion of males to females which exceeded four to one in the first contingents and later reached a ratio of 19 to 1 during the years 1924 to 1930.

The Filipinos were slightly less than one out of eight in the population at the 1940 and 1950 census enumerations. In 1960 there were 69,070 persons classified as Filipino, and in the 1970's Filipino immigration to Hawaii outstripped all others. From 1970 to 1975 there were 23,404 immigrant aliens from the Philippines admitted to Hawaii and reporting Hawaii as their state of intended residence.

The new immigrants from the Philippines fill in the jobs that most established residents are no longer willing to man. They are found everywhere in the plantations and in the lower paid service jobs. Many young Filipinas work as field hands on the Maui plantations. They are seen in colorful outfits, wearing boots and big sunbonnets. Their supervisors may be Japanese or Portuguese and they report these women to be excellent and reliable field workers. Some of these young women have married older men who are United States citizens, at the same time achieving citizenship for themselves and thus making the transition easier.

Among the older, more established Filipinos are many who have advanced to positions of importance in business and the professions.

A. B. Sevilla

In 1928 the S.S. *President Taft* arrived in Honolulu. On board was a nineteen-year-old Filipino whose voice would, one day, be an alarm clock to thousands of Mauians. His name was A. B. Sevilla. Young Sevilla spent one night on Oahu, then took an inter-island steamer to Kahului. "I remember thinking it was a lot cooler here than back home. I was surprised about the island. The trees were all small, not really tall like home." Sevilla was not on a contract and paid his own way to Hawaii. His family had borrowed money on their rice paddies to pay his passage. Once here, however, he signed a three-year contract that paid one dollar a day for twenty-five working days a month and fare back to the Philippines at the end of the contract. It took him until 1966 to collect on the last portion of his contract, but the Hawaiian Sugar Planters Association stood behind their agreement and paid his air fare to the Philippines.

Sevilla's career on the plantation was spotty. He tried the railroad but quit "because there was no future in it. I wanted to work in the canefields." He tried to get a job in the mill but was turned down there. "So many days I had no job—nobody wanted me. The camp police found out I wasn't working and came around and wanted to know why. In those days the police checked if you said you were sick or weren't on the job."

For a time Sevilla worked in the engine room at the Puunene mill, then applied for a job in a store owned by Alexander and Baldwin. "The mill boss said I couldn't work for the store without approval, so that job was out for the time being. I didn't go to work anymore (at the mill) and finally the mill boss gave up and I got the job at the store and worked in the wholesale section for seven and a half years."

Sevilla tried to get further education, played in an orchestra, wrote a book in Ilocano about the Filipino immigrants, and in 1938 opened his own store in Wailuku.

"Life was hard [before he opened the store]. Because I'm a Filipino they thought I should have less money. You can't do that, I thought." He went to night school in the thirties and learned bookkeeping and typing, and in 1946, when Maui got its first radio station, Sevilla joined the staff. The man too small to work in the fields became Maui's first home-grown broadcasting personality, a position he held until he retired in 1976.

These stories of individuals who came to Maui from other countries and worked their way through difficult times, hard work and sacrifice, gave their children education and a better life, could be multiplied by thousands. These people accepted their lot and persevered in what, for them, was a strange and alien land; they adapted, survived discrimination, poverty, power struggles, massive social upheavals, and the rapid technological changes, to contribute the work of their hands, the sweat of their brows, and eventually the creativity of their minds to this island home of many peoples.

Growing Up Hawaiian

The story of a man who grew up Hawaiian on Maui may give insight into another island life style as it was adapted to the social changes of the twentieth century. This man is Charles Pili Keau, a citizen of Maui who represents in his attitudes, works, and community services, many of the best aspects of the survival (and revival) of traditional values.

His cooperation and interest in Hawaiian history and prehistory (mainly archaeology) have added significant scope to the story of his life, especially as Charlie expresses a feeling of social obligation to his fellow citizens. He has said that his aim is to work "toward preserving the Hawaiian people's heritage and a serene island existence for everyone."

Charlie is probably about as pure Hawaiian as can be found on the islands. One greatgrandfather was Portuguese from the Azores and it was this single ancestor from whom the family took its devout Catholic faith. His paternal grandparents were pure Hawaiian, named Pili and Koleka Kenui. His father was Charles Pili, and the family lived by the sea near the heiaus at Paukukalo. Father Pili was a cowboy and later a carpenter for the county. Mr. Pili knew the "ocean scent," the currents, the richest fishing grounds, the types of fish, and the methods of catching these essential Hawaiian foods. Although he died when Charlie was only two, this knowledge was passed on by his uncle Antone, the brother of Mrs. Annie Faustino Pili, Charlie's mother.

After her husband's death, Mrs. Pili married David Keau, member of a large and respected Hawaiian family. They had three children and adopted a Korean child named Edwin Pung. Charlie took the name of his stepfather.

Charlie's mother served as the great bond of the family. She was the organizer and loving disciplinarian. She told the children about the traditional Hawaiian customs, the old legends, the ancestors. She was very active in the Hawaiian membership of St. Anthony's Church. For the feast days of Corpus Christi, Mrs. Keau made Hawaiian foods. She was well loved in the community and known, too, for her teaching of quilt-making for the parish women.

Among his peers, Charlie gained a better understanding of the cultures of many ethnic groups on Maui. His best friend, Soichi Takayama would bring a lunch of sushi and vegetables, especially for Charlie. Charlie would trade some poi, fish, or breadfruit with his pal. He learned the eating habits, dress customs, and social ways of his Filipino, Portuguese, Puerto Rican, Japanese, and Chinese friends. In his elementary classes there seemed to be an even distribution in the numbers of different ethnic students.

Charles believed while he was a young boy and during the 1930's, that "life was truly beautiful, really great times." He felt the islands' people were very happy in their simple lifestyles. They worked hard, and they had few luxuries or worries. Although the ethnic groups were segregated within the camp housing tracts, there existed a big family whose reality embraced Aloha spirit. If one group sponsored a party everyone was invited. If a wedding ceremony was planned, then everyone contributed their *kokua* or help, and everyone enjoyed the fruits of lengthy preparation.

"People brought their fish catch, harvested fruits and vegetables, and handmade crafts to the Saturday flea market on Market Street in Wailuku. A person knew almost every other person in town. Whether the people went to the beach or shopping all day, they usually never locked their house doors. Any friend was welcome to enter and to eat food even when no one was at home. Aloha meant what is mine is yours; a selfless favor really came from the heart and not the mouth. People were not suspicious of others. Nearly every person was inwardly content and friendly."

With the start of World War II in 1941, Charlie had to quit school to help support his family. Charles was drafted in 1945, at age eighteen, and cleared the course of basic training at Camp Hood, Texas. As an Infantryman in the Army, he continued with special training for the Army Transportation Corps at Camp Plauche in New Orleans.

Charles Keau feels that the war truly revolutionized Hawaii in several ways. The war had exposed Hawaii to the rest of the world through those who travelled abroad and by serving as the major base of the United States in the Pacific. The people had won a high degree of self-confidence and felt capable of governing themselves. The people no longer wanted the nonrepresentative, paternalistic system which had dominated the islands for over one hundred years.

Charlie feels that during this time many islanders moved farther away from their parents' lifestyles. Old customs and a great family and community love were dissolving as people sought more individualism and stylism. People locked their doors and aloha spirit decayed while some persons prejudged each other more often by appearance or possessions. A sense of tolerance, the willingness to accept others who do not hold a particular tradition or who look differently, still exists uniquely in Hawaii. Yet Charlie feels that modern economic thinking had changed the old quality of Aloha.

In 1948, Charles was at home on Maui when he went to work for Maui Pineapple Company. In 1955, he went to Eniewetok in the Marshall Islands to work on the atomic energy project on the construction labor force. Returning to Maui in 1956, he married a girl of Spanish descent and together they raised six fine children.

In 1971, Charlie began to work in the State Parks and Recreation program to restore historical sites on state land on Maui. The first site that was cleared and marked for visiting was at the two half-destroyed heiaus in upper Paukukalo where Charlie had played as a boy with his brothers picking mangoes and swimming in the stream below the stone walls. Charlie felt privileged to work with the anthropologists and archaeologists of the Bishop Museum, especially Dr. Kenneth Emory, Dr. Rob Hommon, and Dr. Y. Sinoto with whom he worked on the archaeological sites at La Pérouse Bay. He also worked with Leslie Bruce of Maui and especially learned to love archaeology while working with two young researchers who taught him how to map and draw archaeological layouts and how to work carefully in the field. Together they exchanged new and old knowledge about the Polynesian heritage and Charlie was able to enhance their findings with many peculiarities which he knew were found in the heiaus, the village ruins, or the artifacts.

Charlie is an active member of the Maui Historical Society, took part in the Society's inventory of pre-historical sites on Maui, assisted in the Bishop Museum's survey of ancient sites for the developments at Wailea and Kapalua. In 1974 he became a maintenance man for the County with primary assignment at Kepaniwai Park in the Iao Valley.

Special assignments included surveys for the Federal Corps of Engineers to determine historical impacts of plans for Maui's principal river basins.

In an interview in 1977, Charlie had this to say about the native Hawaiians:

"I feel that the people are gaining confidence and want to articulate their concern about a rapidly growing population on the homeland. There was a gap between 1920 and 1970 when Hawaiians wouldn't speak up because they feared that people would misinterpret them. People would doubt what the wise folks knew. For instance, a local man believes a special place is kapu, or sacred, and he tries to tell someone. The listener may think—this man is silly, superstitious, or trying to scare me. What the local man really means to convey are attitudes of respect, carefulness, and preservation. He means to say, 'put all things back where you found them and keep a modest vibration within your heart'."

Charlie's perspective seems to embrace the uniqueness of Hawaiian history, tradition, and today's modern life and society. Charlie is committed to the aloha within everyone and to the power of the *'aina*, the land.

The Haoles

Part of the story of the haole ruling chiefs of Maui in the nineteenth century and earlier twentieth century has been told in the chapter on sugar, though it must be pointed out parenthetically that the word "sugar" alone does not describe the power structure; it only symbolized it. It was sugar, its planting, and production which was the basis for the whole power structure which developed and in which those who owned and controlled the sugar industry gradually came to control first its refining, then its marketing, then the shipping which carried it to market, then the supply of all its accessory supplies, its insurance, and then the banks which supplied the capital, and the ownership of the vast acreages of the best lands on every island of the chain. With this enormous economic power, a veritable ruling kingdom of sugar arose which then added political power to the oligarchy.

A so-called Big Five emerged. It was composed of A & B, American Factors, Castle & Cooke, C. Brewer & Company, and Theo Davies and Company. Dillingham made it a "Big Sixth."

This group controlled seventy-five per cent of the sugar crop by 1910 and ninety-six per cent by 1933. The same handful of men who controlled the Big Five ran the government of Hawaii.

Every one of the Big Five had at least one direct descendant of a missionary on its board, and Alexander & Baldwin had six—William Alexander, Harry A. Baldwin, F. F. Baldwin, William O. Smith, A. C. Alexander, A. C. Castle and J. P. Cooke. "Those names and others from the missionary family . . . appeared on the boards of almost every important firm that did business at Honolulu. . . . Even the 'Big Sixth,' Walter F. Dillingham . . . was related to the missionary family through his mother."

"A member of the United States Attorney General's staff drew a diagram of interlocking directorates in 1932, and the result was a picture of lines of power and influence such as Walter Murray Gibson, Claus Spreckels and King Kalakaua would never have dreamed of in their most extravagant moments."

Between 1900 and 1940 eight out of every ten men elected to the Territorial legislature were Republicans. Very large sums were spent by the Big Five to elect Republicans, and the legislators could hardly help being considerate of their benefactors. The Big Five members did not mind being accused of paternalism. After all, the wages of plantation workers in Hawaii were higher than anywhere else in the world, and laborers' living conditions improved after the strikes of 1909 and 1920. Management was ready by then to concede that a happy worker was less likely to strike than a disgruntled one.

The positions of power and prestige enjoyed by most haoles, almost from the first arrival of Captain Cook, have meant a very different experience in Hawaii as compared to any other immigrant group. The proportion of the population who could occupy such positions of influence and prestige was necessarily limited, and no large numbers of haoles were reported in the censuses throughout the nineteenth century.

It was not until Hawaii began to figure prominently as a military and tourist frontier that their numbers and their proportion of the total population rose markedly.

The Master of Rose Ranch

Although it is not typical of the life-style of all the wealthy planters in the nineteenth century, a story that is told of James Makee of Rose Ranch on Maui illustrates something of their philosophy and shows a sharp contrast to the life-styles of the immigrant peoples who worked for them.

Makee prided himself more on knowing how to live than on knowing how to make money. Over the years, he put about a million dollars into his plantation at Ulupalakua on the slopes of Haleakala, and the thousand acres he kept under crop yielded him 800 tons of sugar in a good year. At the same time, he cultivated the good life on a grand scale. His rambling plantation house was ringed with guest cottages, and he liked to keep the cottages filled and the guests content. He bought a piano for his parlor, an organ for his chapel, and outside he built a billiard room, a tennis court, and a bowling alley with one small kanaka boy to tend each pin. His gardens were lavish, and his guests were invited to canter on horseback among thousands of trees imported to give variety to the landscape, along with birds to sing in them. Makee knew how to put on a show for royalty but handled most occasions with an understated grace.

Once, while the common seamen of a touring warship were enjoying barbequed beef at Makee's private landing, Makee himself was serving fowl to the officers in the dining hall of the plantation house. After the main course, the admiral, full of good food and good cheer, remarked that his host was fit to carve a peacock at a Roman feast, and Makee replied nonchalantly, "Gentlemen, the birds you have just eaten—were peacocks!"

The old white kamaainas (long-time residents) of Maui look back nostalgically, somewhat like the plantation folk of the south after the Civil War, to "the good old days." Things have changed in many ways, the sharper differences have blended or melted or been greatly modified, yet compared to other states, Hawaii, and especially Maui, still provides an enviable life-style to the descendants of the missionaries who did so well with the sugar and pineapple. They no longer control politics but the economic power, though quietly and responsibly wielded, is still immense. This is because land is the basis of power in Hawaii, and on Maui the best land is still controlled by the big agribusinesses which are now turning to land development.

It is only fair to add that these enterprising managers made possible the development of profitable sugar and pineapple plantations on an efficient and large scale basis and that their enterprise provided the jobs which helped the peoples who came from other lands to find a living here and eventually a far better life for their children and grandchildren than they would have known otherwise.

Maui's political and economic system is open to all races—the Mayor of Maui County is Portuguese, the County Council, once nearly totally haole, had in 1976, six Japanese members, two Portuguese* and one haole of partial Hawaiian ancestry. Department heads, with one possible exception, were all of Oriental or Portuguese descent.

In the 1950's a new sort of migration began, this one on a massive scale. The newcomers were not immigrants but visitors, and they brought millions of dollars which they spent on Maui in great quantities. They were and are the tourists. An increasing number of them come back to stay.

Since the 1960's they have arrived in droves which, in one year alone, numbered over twenty times the resident population. This mass invasion and the business of serving their needs for rest and relaxation has changed the face of the island of Maui and altered its future radically.

---

* Portuguese, listed in a recent census as Haole, steadfastly refuse to be considered in that category.

10

MAUI REMEMBERED: 1900-1950

In which Maui dreams peacefully in the sun for forty years; is awakened by World War II; sleeps again briefly, but finds the island life rapidly changing as the second half of the Twentieth Century begins.

The calm surface of life on the Island of Maui in the decades before 1940 was hardly rippled. Early in the century several famous authors visited briefly and wrote articles that were read nationwide.

Mark Twain had been enchanted with the Islands in 1866 when he wrote his often-quoted phrase, "the loveliest fleet of islands that lies anchored in any ocean." Half a century later, Jack London, then America's most famous author, fell under Hawaii's spell and wrote two volumes of short stories based on the Islands.

Jack London visited Maui, where he was the guest of Louis von Tempsky, manager of the Haleakala Ranch. Louis' young daughter, Armine, an aspiring writer, showed London some of her manuscripts. He told her that it was "mostly tripe" but that she had talent. He encouraged her to continue. Armine von Tempsky became a successful writer, especially with her best-selling autobiography, *Born in Paradise.*

Millions of readers thrilled to the romantic life on a Maui ranch, but not one reader in ten thousand had any clear idea where Maui was or even that such a place existed in fact.

The first World War hardly touched the quiet life of the island. People remembered that supplies of flour and other commodities were scarce and that they rather enjoyed having to fall back on the island's own resources. Schoolchildren were taught to care for "home gardens," flour was made out of dried bananas and people "made do" with foods and materials which the old Hawaiians had always used effectively. Maui lost one man in World War I.

Some German sailors stranded in Hawaii were removed from American ships. These men were imprisoned; some were paroled and placed on Kipahulu Plantation, Maui, where they remained at work until the restrictions were removed in the summer of 1919.

After World War I, a select few, very well-heeled visitors came to vacation or spend the winter in one of the two or three existing hotels at Waikiki. Some of them flew in small amphibians to see the volcanoes on Hawaii, but Maui was seldom, if ever, on their itinerary. In 1936, Pam Am inaugurated the "China Clippers" for regular weekly flights from San Francisco to Honolulu. These flying boats, cruising at the high altitude of 10,000 feet, took eighteen hours each way. The people of the islands were still traveling by small inter-island steamers, a rough trip but vastly improved over the uncomfortable and even dangerous voyages between islands in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.

World War II

The Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor was a terrific shock to the people of Maui. They were stunned, then galvanized into action. Still it was some time before beaches could be barricaded and gun emplacements prepared at potential landing places. A Japanese invasion was fully expected.

A submarine lobbed a few shells into Kahului Harbor, a couple of them making holes in two or three places. None of them exploded. On January 25, 1942, another submarine torpedoed and sank the transport *Gen. Royal T. Frank* in the channel between Maui and Hawaii. Twenty-nine persons were lost while thirty-three survivors made it to land.

A terrible accident the following year took the lives of a score of servicemen who were training on Maui. Two Navy bombers on a training flight collided in the air over Maui on December 7, 1943. Both pilots parachuted to safety but their respective radiomen were killed. A bomb carried by one of the planes, loosened by the impact, fell and exploded in the midst of a group of Marines, killing twenty and injuring twenty-nine. The news of this disaster was only briefly mentioned on the inside pages of the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin.* No details were given. The accident occurred on the second anniversary of Pearl Harbor.

The Japanese invasion of Maui never materialized but the island became an important training, staging, and rest area for the Marines in the Pacific.

The Fourth Marine Division

Robert Sherrod, author and war correspondent attached to the Fourth Marine Division wrote in 1946: "There is no doubt in my mind that the historians will decide, when the final returns are in, that the Central Pacific was the main stroke against Japan. This was the campaign where the Fourth fought all its battles—at Roi-Namur, Saipan-Tinian, and Iwo Jima—and fought them as magnificently as Americans ever fought.

". . . It was in combat but a total of 63 days . . . yet . . . no division participated in more violent combat than did the Fourth . . . the Fourth set something of a record in making four beachheads—all of them bitterly opposed—in less than 13 months."

Yet, in many ways the Fourth was more fortunate than some of its sister divisions. Its zone of action was exclusively in the Central Pacific; jungles, oppressive heat, and tropical disease were not part of its experience; casualties from malaria, filariasis, and jungle rot were practically unknown; it was based, between operations, in "the next best place to the States—the Island of Maui." They were not so fortunate where enemy bullets and shells were concerned. Sixty-three days of merciless but futile enemy opposition accounted for probably the highest casualty rate of any Marine division. During the four operations in which the division was engaged, a total of 81,718 men saw action one or more times. Robert Sherrod wrote, ". . . the price the Division had to pay was heavy—as it must be on small, vital targets. It amounted to about 75 per cent of the original divisional strength (17,086). It takes *men* to stand such losses and come up as determined as ever. The Fourth had the men."

Even before the Fourth Marine Division landed on Maui where a base camp was being prepared for them, they got their first glimpse of the island on the way to the Marshalls.

Their transports put in to Lahaina Roads for a day of provisioning. It was January 1944 and the ships had left San Diego for a secret destination, the first attack in the Pacific to be mounted directly from the mainland United States. They had trained at Camp Pendleton, California, and knew only that they were on their way to first combat under the name "Operation Flintlock." As they looked longingly at the green fields, the palm trees and the mountains and beaches of the island, they did not know that they would be landing here a little more than a month later after the battle of Roi-Namur. For those who survived, Maui would be "home base" for the next two years.

When they returned to Maui from Roi-Namur in late February 1944, the Division had lost one hundred and ninety men killed and five hundred forty-seven wounded during the brief twenty-four-hour engagement. Two hundred and sixty-four Japanese prisoners had been captured and 3,472 enemy troops lay buried on tiny Roi-Namur. Overnight, the "green" Fourth had become veterans.

Camp Maui

The transports landed the Marines, 16,000 of them, at Kahului Harbor whence they were carried in a long convoy of trucks from the docks through Paia and Makawao to their camp at Kokomo. Three times in fifteen months the Fourth Division made this journey from the Kahului docks twelve miles up the hill to camp, and each time Maui seemed more beautiful to them.

Camp Maui gradually took shape as base for both combat training and rest and recreation.

"Slowly, in spite of the mud and the wind and the rain and the first pangs of homesickness for the States—slowly, civilization began to grow out of barren fields. Buildings went up for offices, tents for living quarters; mess halls were constructed and roads carved through the mire. Post Exchanges opened up with supplies of 'pogey bait',* tobacco, and enough beer for two bottles per man a night. Movie screens and stages were built in each regimental area. Ball diamonds were laid out and boxing rings constructed. Company libraries were opened, and Marines had their choice of 73 magazines. Chaplains, somehow, procured enough lumber for chapels; electric lights were installed in all tents; public-address systems were wired into the company areas and used for piping announcements and the latest music to Marines. Within a few months Camp Maui had become a relatively decent place to live." There were nightly movies, in the rain before a theater was erected. Hula girls tried to introduce the Marines to some of the old Hawaiian culture, and the Fourth organized its own show which became famous in the Pacific first as "The Fubar Follies," later as the "Just 4 Fun Show" when it toured the "foxhole circuit."

On April 1, 1944, General Harry Schmidt made the first of several mass presentations of the Purple Heart during the Division's stay on Maui. Thousands of Marines were to receive this medal at one time or another at Camp Maui.

On April 26, 1944, Admiral Nimitz journeyed to Camp Maui to present awards to men who had earned them at Roi-Namur. Twice again on Maui, mass awards for bravery were presented to men of the Fourth—after Saipan-Tinian, and after Iwo Jima. Each time there were fewer of the original men of the Fourth to hear the words of commendation. On July 4, 1945, a parade was held on the Camp Maui airstrip, at which 714 men of the Division were decorated.

---

* "Pogey bait" in Navy parlance is candy.

As the war rolled on, Maui more and more became "home" to the men of the Fourth. USOs in Haiku, Makawao, Kahului, and Wailuku furnished hot showers, games, swimming, tennis, dances, and refreshments. It was here that Marines met the girls of Maui, friendships were formed and romances blossomed.

The terrain and beaches of the island provided excellent training ground for the battles ahead. Replacements arrived, and the Army's Jungle Training Center was opened to Marines. Exercises and training hikes utilized some of Maui's more rugged terrain. The thirteen-mile hike through the crater was a trial for the sturdiest leg muscles. All the Division's amphibious maneuvers for the Marianas and Iwo Jima operations were held off Ma'alaea Bay and along the beaches and kiawe jungles east of the bay.

In May 1944, during rehearsals for the assault on Saipan, held at Ma'alaea Bay and Kaho'olawe, an LCT in which Marines were sleeping was pitched overboard from the deck of LST-485 by heavy seas, owing to insufficient lashings, and nineteen men were lost.

A total of forty-seven training areas, many belonging to the Army, were shared by the units in training. Army facilities on Maui consisted of a jungle training center, a village fighting course, a cave fighting course, and an infiltration course. The fortified jungle position consisted of twenty-two pillboxes and emplacements well concealed in bamboo groves, under the roots of banyan trees, and in thick undergrowth.

There were numerous other training areas. The author of the History of the 4th Marines in World War II, wrote, "Families in the Island threw open their doors to the Marines . . . citizens of Maui proved that 'Aloha' was more than a word. The Fourth soon became 'Maui's Own.' . . . Who will ever forget the reception that Maui gave the Fourth when it returned from Iwo? It is not an exaggeration to say that no division anywhere received a more heartwarming welcome when it came back from battle."

Every returning Marine on that occasion received a little pamphlet. Reading that message from the people of Maui, the returning Marines must have felt how good it was to be alive and to be back in their temporary island home. They had been through their worst battle of all—Iwo Jima. As the transports drew up to their moorings at Kahului Harbor, the men stood quietly along the rails; the bands lined up in front of a welcoming crowd; the hula girls stood waiting to begin the dance . . . one who was there remembered a hush, a moment of stunned silence . . . then the band played *Aloha Oe* and the cheering could be heard twelve miles up the mountain where Camp Maui was ready to receive them for the last time. Some on Maui thirty years later recalled the message which read:

"ALOHA. Hi, you Marines! Welcome home! It's no 'snow job' when we tell you that the servicemen and women and the civilians of Maui are throwing this big shindig for you because we think you're just about the greatest guys that ever landed on this Island. When the news came over the radio that the Marines had hit Iwo Jima, everybody asked the same question, 'Are the Maui Marines there?' Then we heard the news flash that you and a lot of other Marines were in their pitching. After that, nothing else that happened seemed to matter very much. We don't need to tell you that everyone from Hana to Lahaina is mighty proud of you. And when we read that you had named that first street 'Maui Boulevard,' we were practically bursting at the seams.

"So welcome to Maui—the old friends and the new! Welcome to Iao Valley and Haleakala—to the rainbows and the rain (that everlasting rain at Camp Maui)—the steaks and the banana splits—the pineapples and the poi—the carnation leis and the steel guitars. But, most important of all, welcome back to all the folks on Maui who think it might be a pretty good idea to add a new word to the famous slogan, MAUI NO KA OI ('Maui is the best') and let the world know it is now, MAUI MARINES NO KA OI!" It was signed, "The People of Maui."

One thousand four hundred and sixty-two of their comrades were killed at Iwo, three hundred forty-four more had died of wounds and seven thousand two hundred ninety-two of them had been wounded. Total casualties for the 4th Division of Marines alone in their sixty-three days of combat, amounted to 2,774 killed in action, 524 died of wounds and 14,424 wounded. Strength of the Division averaged between seventeen and eighteen thousand during 1943, 1944, and 1945, so that the total casualties (including wounded) amounted to more than seventy-five per cent of the assigned divisional strength!

From April 1945 when they arrived back from Iwo, until the 4th Marines left for San Diego and deactivation in October-November 1945, the finishing touches were put on Camp Maui. Roads were paved, frame buildings took the place of tents and a number of auditoriums were built, "finally making it possible to see movies without getting wet." New athletic fields were laid out, one of them named for the Division's football ace, Howard "Smiley" Johnson, who had been killed at Iwo. The 4th Marine Division's historian wrote, "For the old timers who had slogged around in the mud when the Division first came to Maui, it didn't seem quite right. They weren't kidding anybody though. Everyone enjoyed it, for Maui had become just about the next best place to home."

Soon after the Japanese surrender, the Fourth was selected as the first Marine division to return to the states. The elation that followed was mixed with a pang of sadness. The men of the Fourth had become genuinely fond of Maui and its people. And the people of Maui gave them a succession of farewells between October 6 when the first contingent boarded the Carrier Escort *Attu* at Kahului and November 3 when the Carrier Escort *Kassan Bay* sailed with the last of the Division.

On reaching San Diego, the various units were sent to Camp Pendleton for demobilization. The date was November 28, 1945. Two years, three months, and thirteen days after its activation, the Fourth Marine Division was no more.

Camp Maui was also "deactivated" and typically there was the same waste of material that took place in so many armed forces installations at the end of World War II. In a few cases, half-tracks along with heaps of other gear were pushed over the side of the gulch or burned. Even the worthy little vehicle, the Jeep, was disposed of, only a few falling into civilian hands, and thirty-five years later still occasionally seen running about the boondocks of the island.

Little else remains of Camp Maui except the concrete slabs which once formed the floors of quonset huts—these are to be found in the open fields between the pretty little farms that dot the landscape at Kokomo. A small monument beside the road just above "Giggle Hill" * bears the following inscription:

This Plaque Marks the Site
of
CAMP MAUI
World War II Home
of the
4th MARINE DIVISION
affectionately and proudly called
"MAUI'S OWN"

Roi-Namur (Marshall Islands)
January 31-February 8, 1944
Battle of Saipan (Marianas Islands)
June 15-July 9, 1944
Battle of Tinian (Marianas Islands)
July 22-August 1, 1944
Battle of Iwo Jima (Volcano Islands)
February 19-March 16, 1945

Stationed at Camp Maui between combat engagements
February 18, 1944 to November 3, 1945

Commanding Generals
Major General Harry Schmidt USMC
Major General Clifton B. Cates USMC

---

* The forested hill of Kahikoa was given this name by the Marines who said that when local girlfriends were taken there on picnics, one could hear their giggles coming from the woods.

The Men From Maui

Maui's own sons were serving in World War II, some giving their lives courageously especially in the European theater where the 100th Infantry Battalion and the 442nd Combat Team became heroes of the Italian and French campaigns. In Italy the famous 442nd was at the front four weeks without a break, getting only two hours' sleep a night and spending the rest of each day defeating battle-hardened elite German troops. Then the 442nd was sent to France, where in thirty-five minutes it smashed a Nazi stronghold that had defied other Allied forces for five weeks. By the end of the war, the unit had been engaged in seven major campaigns and won seven Presidential citations at the cost of 9,486 casualties.

Individual members of the 442nd won a total of 18,143 decorations including the Congressional Medal of Honor and fifty-two Distinguished Service Crosses. No other unit of the armed forces established a comparable war record.

These fighting units were manned by young Americans of Japanese ancestry (A.J.A.'s), the *Nisei*, or second generation Americans. One hundred and twenty-six men from Maui, whose permanent population was then about 47,000, gave their lives in World War II, not all of them A.J.A's. The roster at Maui's Memorial Gymnasium lists the names Rosario and Alborado, several Wongs, a Prescott, a Polansky, and a Hoopii, among a majority of Japanese names. The monument there reads:

In Memoriam

In honor of all Americans of the County of Maui
who died in the service of their country
that beauty and freedom of our country be preserved
for all humanity

The Post-War Period

After the war, the Japanese in Hawaii were fully recognized not only as loyal, but as patriotic Americans. The young men of the *Nisei* who fought so bravely abroad, returned to Hawaii to be received by cheering crowds and grateful families. Many of them took advantage of the G.I. Bill to further their education, becoming prominent businessmen, teachers, lawyers, doctors, dentists, government officials, and political leaders. It was with their help and leadership that a new political power was forged out of the Democratic Party.

The Unions, already powerful in Hawaii, began to organize more effectively for political action as the professional core of a new political machine took power in the Territory from the long-established Republican Party and its stronghold among the Big Five.

On Maui, the local governing body was the Board of Supervisors headed by a County Chairman and Executive Officer who was, in effect, the chief officer of the unique four-island county of Maui. For many years, the Board had been dominated by the Republican hierarchy. For a time before and after World War II, the man who wielded the political power was the Territorial Senator, Harold W. Rice, a son-in-law of H. P. Baldwin.

Years later, Eddie Tam told the following story to Bob Krauss of the Honolulu *Advertiser:* After about fifteen years Eddie was earning a salary of $35.00 a week. He asked Senator Rice for a raise. The Senator said, "I tell you what I'll do, Eddie. I'll run you for the Board of Supervisors. It's only a part time job but it'll give you a little extra income."

In 1942, Eddie Tam was elected to the Board as a Republican. In 1944, Senator Rice switched parties and ran as a

Democrat. Eddie switched, too, and won again. By this time he began to realize that he had political power in his own right. He never lost an election after that.

In 1948, Eddie and the Senator had a falling out, Eddie quit or was fired as the Senator's secretary, and thereupon decided to run for the Maui County Chairmanship without Senator Rice's blessing. He won easily and Maui County had a new political power.

For eighteen years Eddie Tam opened the Maui County Fair, gave out Boy Scout awards (and an average of two keys to Maui every week), led the Whaling Spree Parade, greeted important visitors at the airport, feuded with political opponents, and sang the praises of Maui to anyone who would listen.

He stood only five feet five inches in his two-tone golfing shoes. His head barely cleared the steering wheel of his Cadillac, the back window of which carried a sign "Mayor Eddie Tam says Thank You."

The sign was put there following the 1958 election in which Tam won his sixth term as County Chairman by nearly 3,000 votes. He was immensely popular on Maui and two other signs are a clue to his success. A sign outside his office door read: "Courteous service to the public is the guiding principle of this office." Another hanging in the Board of Supervisors' meeting room read: "You can't sell peanuts at the end of a parade."

Eddie Tam was born of immigrant parents from China and never got beyond the ninth grade in school. He laid the foundations for his political career by managing orchestras which provided entertainment for community projects from highway dedications to campaign rallies.

He was a one-man visitors' bureau, especially when traveling to the mainland. Each trip, he took along hundreds of greeting cards and invited everyone he met to come to Maui. In 1954 during a Lions convention in Madison Square Garden in New York City, he gave away gallons of pineapple juice, 34,000 cubes of Hawaiian sugar and 40,000 vanda orchids.

Eddie Tam was still holding the office of County Chairman in December 1966 when he suddenly died of a heart attack. The headline in the Honolulu *Advertiser* was, "Maui Won't Be The Same Without 'Friendly Eddie.' "

A special election was called to elect Eddie Tam's successor.

A New Kind of High Chief

A young man from the tiny village of Paia, through brains, hard work, and administrative and political skills had risen to leadership in the Legislature of the Territory of Hawaii. His name was Elmer Cravalho and, at the time of Eddie Tam's death, he was Speaker of the House of Representatives in Honolulu. He decided to return to Maui to stand election for the County Chairman's job. He won by the narrow margin of 139 votes. Ten years later, Elmer was serving his sixth term and seriously considering running for Governor in November 1978. His story is pretty much the story of Maui and the problems which the island community faced in the Sixties and Seventies.

Elmer's grandparents were Portuguese immigrants from the island of San Miguel in the Azores and his grandfather came as a laborer for the sugar plantation. His father was born in one of the camps which the plantation maintained for its workers. The elder Cravalho was a teacher for forty-three years in the Maui schools.

Elmer Franklin Cravalho was born in 1926, the fifth of eight children. He grew up wanting to be an educator and, for eight years before he began his political career, he taught elementary classes on Maui. This interest in and dedication to education is a key to understanding much of his policy and direction of leadership in his role as Mayor of Maui County. His youth on the land and the background in teaching and working with young people gave Elmer Cravalho a grass-roots foothold that has been a factor in the success of his administration of the County.

His concern with social growth drew him into politics. In 1954 Cravalho became Chairman of the Democratic Party on Maui. He won his seat in the House in the same year and led the ticket. That became a habit as he was re-elected to the House every time, continuing each time to lead the ticket. He was a favorite of the late Governor Burns who helped Elmer get things done for Maui. In 1956 Governor Burns asked him to run for Lieutenant Governor, but he declined.

Elmer's first election forced him out of the classroom. A Territorial law prohibited elected officials from holding other public jobs. "When I went back home after that first session there were no jobs available. Where could a young Democrat go for employment? The climate today is different, but at that time [1954] the doors were closed."

He found odd jobs for a time but soon began to move into several business ventures, especially the business of ranching. Careful investments and clever management succeeded and by 1965, Elmer's company, Maui Factors, was running as many as a thousand head of cattle. At the same time he acquired land "up-country" where many of his fellow Portuguese lived and operated their ranches and where Elmer has close family connections. He bought or leased more land and his interest and experience in ranching and agriculture deepened.

His business interests had made him financially independent by the time he took office as Mayor of Maui County. This enabled him, then a confirmed bachelor of forty-two, to devote even more time to the job of running the County. His secretary at the Speaker's office was quoted at one time as saying, "He works too much. Sometimes he's here until 10 or 11 o'clock at night, still working."

On Mayor Cravalho's first day as Maui County Chairman, County Building employees reportedly were all on the job promptly for the first time in memory. That may be apocryphal, yet the same sort of thing was said when he was Speaker of the House and was recognized as one of the hardest working men in the Legislature.

When he took over the Maui office, a writer for the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin* said, "He has brought to the County office the same zeal, comprehensive knowledge of government, energy and ruthlessness that made him both famous and feared as Speaker of the House."

When he came into office people in the County said, "Maui's moving"—and . . . it was. Ten years later in 1977 it seemed to some citizens to be moving too fast.

Nevertheless, the Mayor was recognized for his success in holding the line. In its January 1978 issue, *Hawaii's Business* designated him as Hawaii's Man of the Year. In doing so, the magazine said: "Despite—or maybe because of—his abrasive ways, Mayor Elmer Cravalho has steered Maui County to a position of fiscal health that's the envy of the whole state."

11

MAUI: 1958-1978

In which statehood brings mixed blessings to Maui, the tidal wave of malahinis from the mainland begins, real estate and resort development boom, the county replaces the plantation, and Maui's people, prospering, face the dilemma of development versus preservation.

Maui seems to have been only slightly affected or involved in the Korean and Vietnam wars although men from the island, both draftees and volunteers, took part. One hundred twelve men lost their lives in the two wars. Hawaii had been admitted to the Union as the 50th State in 1959. The island of Maui was a long way from the Mainland, still a speck in the Pacific Ocean relatively unknown, a community of thirty-six thousand people.* Nevertheless, Mainland influences of all kinds came to bear upon the lives of the people and the land.

During the Fifties and early Sixties, and even later, these influences were not too obvious but they were there. They came in with the growing tide of Americans (arriving on bigger and bigger aircraft), who came to Hawaii to "get away from it all," from increased business and government contacts, and from the increased prosperity which enabled more and more islanders to visit or to go to school on the Mainland. Fermenting changes within the community began to upset the older, quieter values and life-styles.

---

* The census of 1960 was something of a shock on Maui as it showed a population *decline* of 10,000 during the twenty years from 1940 to 1960.

"Da Hipas" (The Hippies)

Perhaps the most conspicuous evidence of changing values was supplied by the hippies. In the Sixties, these young wanderers flocked to Maui bringing their new life-style with them. They sought the warm shores of Lahaina, filled the crossroads of the village of Paia, and started exotic religious colonies in Haiku. Their costumes and actions appeared outlandish especially to the Oriental and Portuguese citizens of Maui, many of whom had only recently begun to enjoy the fruits of American middle-class prosperity and who looked upon the hippies as a throwback to more primitive times.

The local farmers and shopkeepers resented the free and easy way in which these young "coast haoles" helped themselves to the abundant mangoes, bananas, guavas, and avocadoes which they naively assumed were available free to all. Shoplifting was on the increase. Many of the newcomers were unwashed, wore their hair as long as possible, and dressed in rags. This seemed an affront to the local postmaster, storekeeper, and tradesmen.

But, most had money to spend and many others had food stamps. Signs in store windows said: "We accept food stamps," and the influx of new customers added to the growth or survival of many a small village store, while others declined or were replaced by craft shops or health food centers.

A community of them on Maui became famous in the local news as "The Banana Patch." A banana farmer at lower Haiku took pity on the homeless youths and gave them permission to camp out in his banana grove. There a colony lived, some in tiny tree houses, others in small shacks or tents on the ground. The County Vice Squad was concerned about marijuana and other drugs, and the County tried to enforce rules against "making love beside the road" which caused some merriment among those who remembered that this was an ancient Hawaiian custom.

A small nudist colony formed at the remote long beach at Makena. Helicopters of Maui's Vice Squad got little sympathy, however, when they swooped over the beach to photograph and later arrest nude bathers. By 1976, the Ulupalakua Ranch had sold the Makena area to the Japanese syndicate Seibu for resort development and only a rare nudist could be seen there.

The Hawaiians, friendly as always, received the hippies with aloha. A group of happy Hawaiians at Baldwin Beach Park on a big Sunday picnic-luau, explained that the two blonde wahines with them were their adopted children, their hipas, a word which they said meant "lost sheep" in Hawaiian.

But the hipas were not the only new immigrants of the Sixties. A steady stream of middle-aged and older folks intent on retiring to a warm place, came to look at Maui, to buy an apartment in one of the mushrooming condominiums which were lifting their heads on the landscape wherever they could get close to the Pacific shore.

Others came, people with money to invest, who could afford a vacation home and many of these prepared that second home for eventual retirement. Rife speculation set in and condominiums were bought one day and sold the next for profits of $10,000 or more. Apartments began to sell so fast that the phenomenon arose of sales from blueprints. In 1978, this was no longer a phenomenon as people were standing in line a year ahead of construction to draw lots for the privilege of buying a one-bedroom apartment for $125,000.

Resort Development

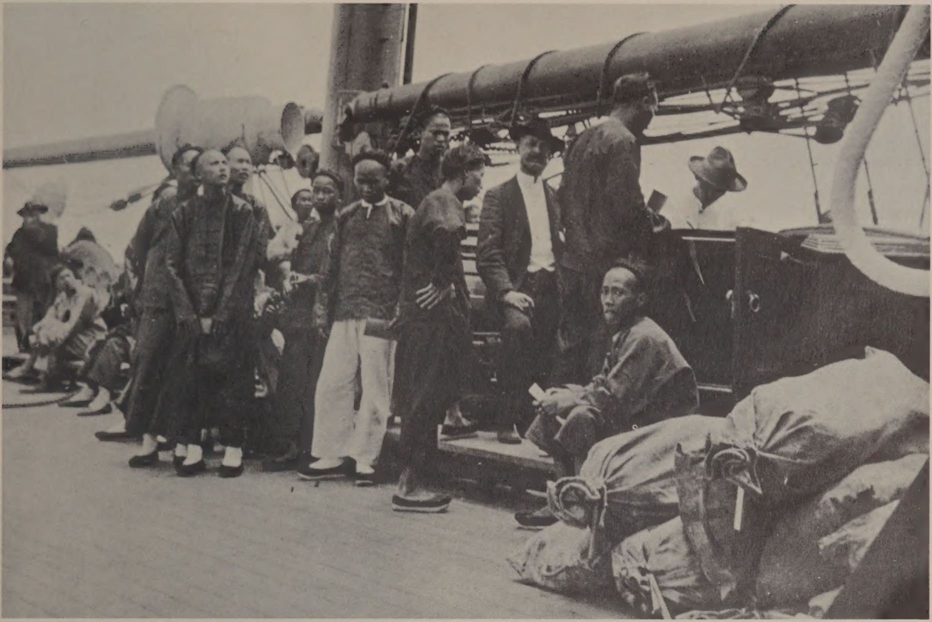
The management and directors of the Big Five (plus Dillingham) while their companies were diversifying and growing into worldwide "megabusinesses," were studying the future of Hawaii with real concern. At the same time, the State's progressive Department of Planning and Economic Development was making in-depth studies and plans, commissions were appointed by the Governor, and Maui, under Mayor Cravalho, set up its own Planning Department. A Commission on the Year 2000 led in "futures planning" and business leaders and the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce raised funds and set up an elaborate system of citizen task forces and conferences called Alternative Economic Futures for Hawaii.

All these efforts seemed to come up with one conclusion, namely, that the future of Hawaii is, was, would be, *Tourism*.*

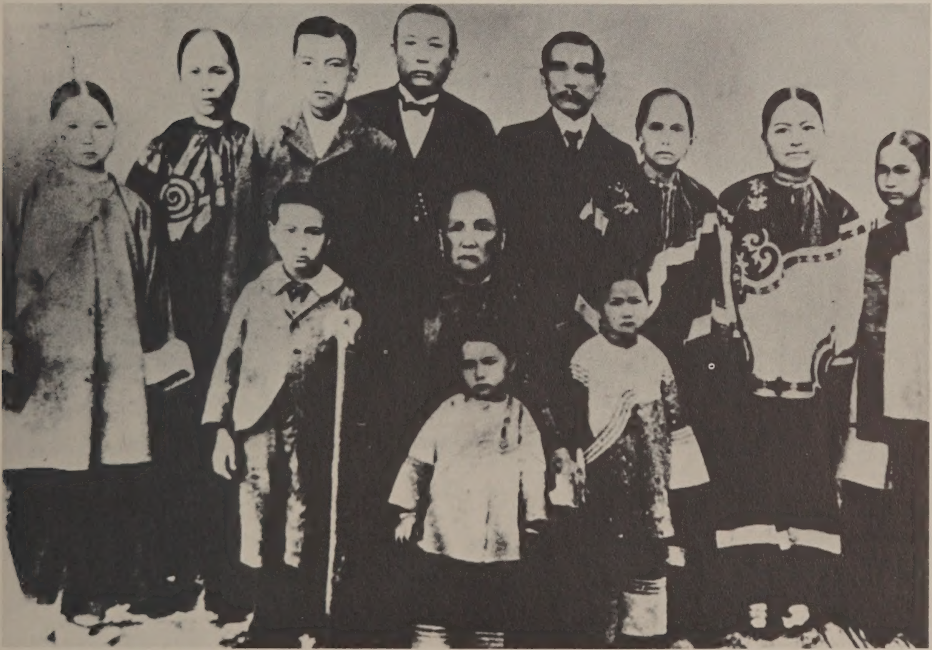
American Factors (Amfac), owners of Pioneer Mill at Lahaina, owned one of Maui's most desirable areas, the place called Kaanapali four miles west of Lahaina. The company planners saw its potential as a super tourist resort. The advantages were palpable: near-perfect climate, uninterrupted

---

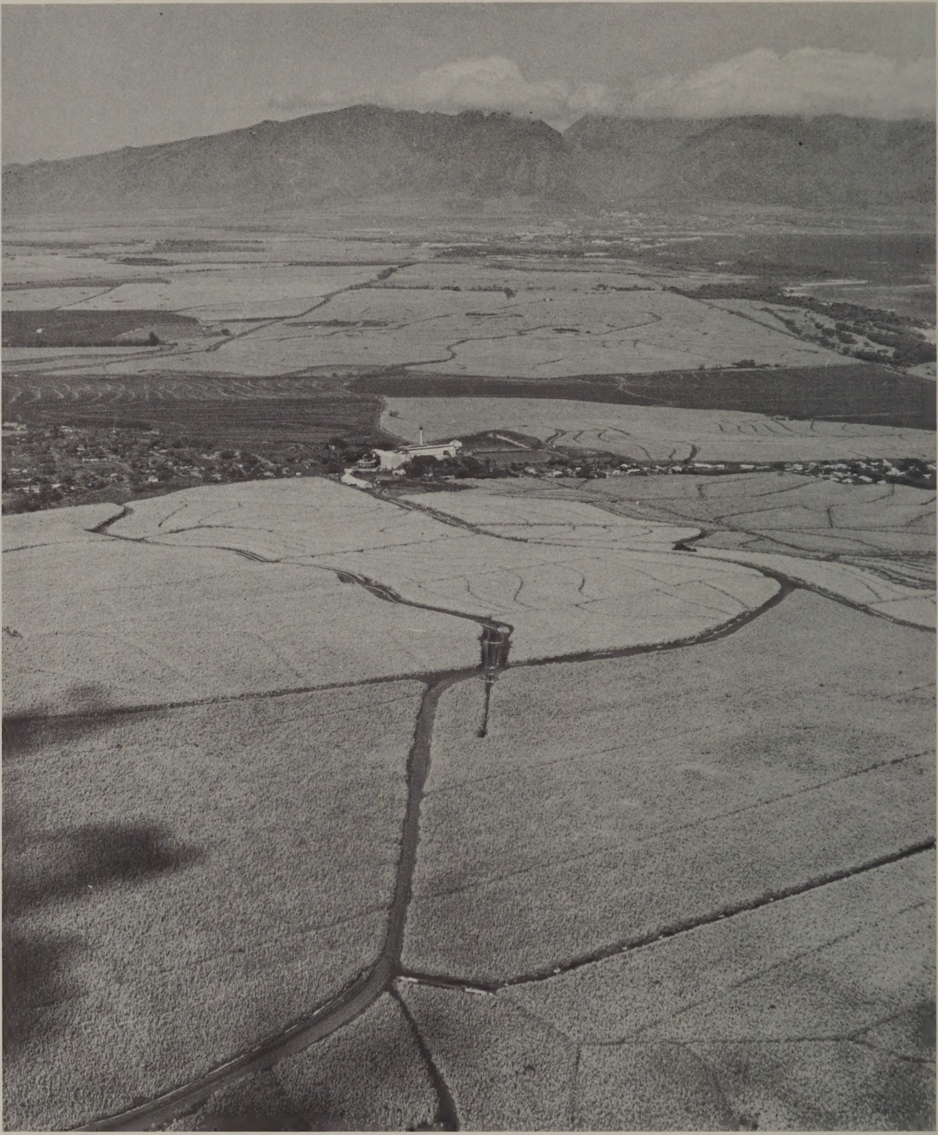
* It was interesting to those who had been saying this all along that it took mainland and university futurists, local task forces, and computerized-research studies to come up with this conclusion!



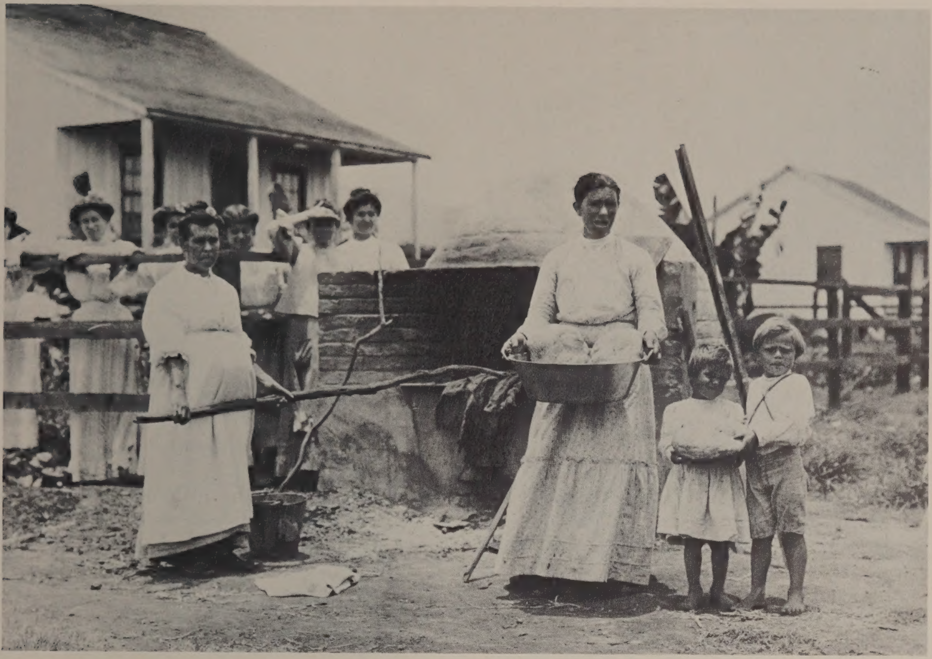
Chinese arriving to work on the sugar plantations, May 1900. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



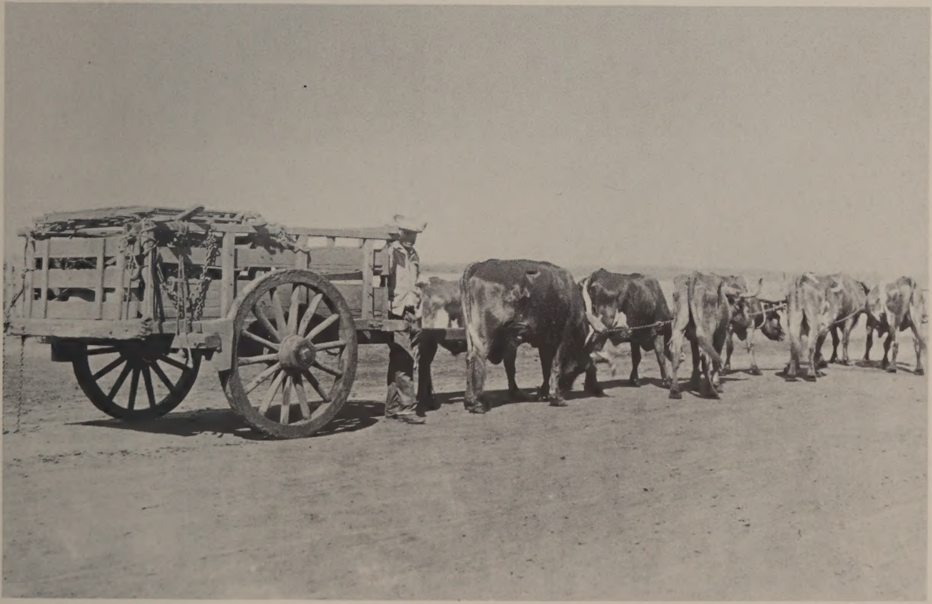
The Sun family on Maui. Dr. Sun Yat-sen, founder of the Chinese Republic, is the fourth from the right. *Hawaii Chinese History Center, Honolulu.*



Thousands of acres of sugar cane make Maui's valley green. Paia Mill at the center. *Alexander & Baldwin, Inc.*



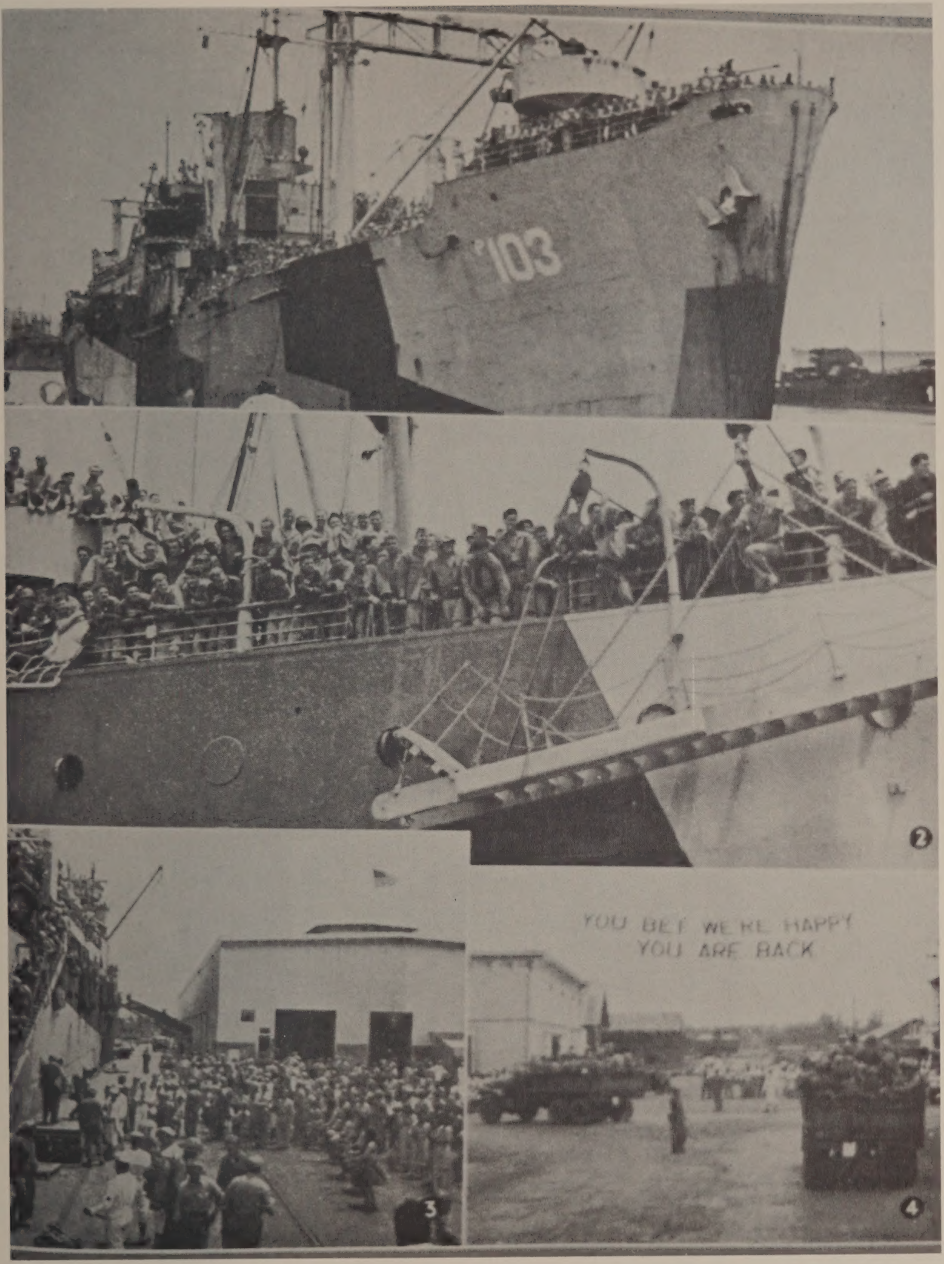
Portuguese bread ovens, Kula. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*



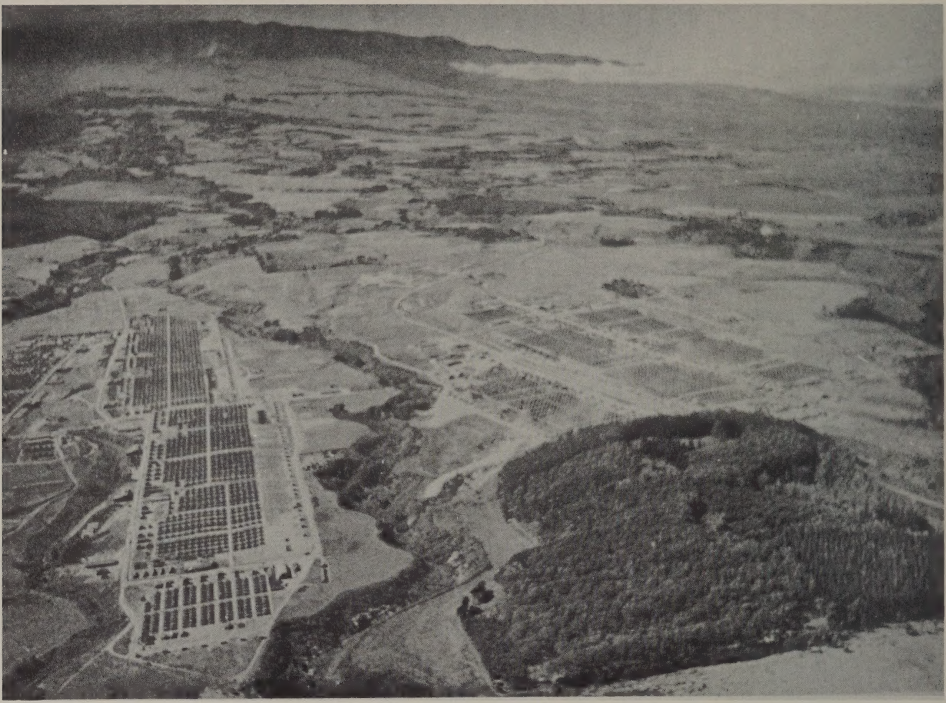
Ranch bullock cart for hauling freight—Ulupalakua Ranch, 1910. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

Japanese women plantation workers. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*

Makawao cowboy David Kuloloia, 1930's. *Archives of Hawaii, Honolulu.*


103
1
2
YOU BET WE'RE HAPPY
YOU ARE BACK
3
4

The Fourth Marine Division returns to Camp Maui from Iwo Jima. *Infantry Journal.*



Camp Maui was "Home" for the Fourth Marine Division between Pacific battles during World War II. *Infantry Journal.*

Harvesting pineapple. *Maui Pineapple Company.*

Elmer Cravalho, the Mayor of Maui County. *Maui County Information Office.*

Hotel Inter-Continental Maui and Wailea Beach. *Alexander & Baldwin, Inc.*

Kapalua: from pineapple fields and rocky headlands—golf courses, condominiums, hotels, beach clubs—and housing for service personnel: the integrated resort complex. *Maui Land and Pineapple Company.*

The Wailea Development centers around two eighteen-hole golf courses which hosted 70,000 golf rounds in 1977. *Alexander & Baldwin, Inc.*

miles of white sand beach shelving into the clearest and, except in Kona storms, the calmest waters of the island. Surrounding sugar cane fields provided green open space and rose in upland sweeps to blue-green mountains—the views which had delighted vistiors since Cook's men first glimpsed them from the decks of the *Resolution* and *Discovery* in 1779. In addition to all this, there was the historic "lady with a past," old Lahaina with its memories of the alii, the missionaries, and the whalermen.

What more could be asked of a setting for catching the tourist trade? Capital, of course, but that was not lacking either. What was needed was taste, style, real care for the people and for the environment, and these were to be had only by careful planning. There was one other important advantage to the planning and the development that followed: the property had but one owner.

The development at Kaanapali became a model of what a "resort destination" should be. And it was an unqualified success from the beginning—a place which the people of Maui could be proud of.

Simultaneously with the building of the tourist complex at Kaanapali, the Lahaina Restoration got under way. The Dwight Baldwin house was restored and opened as a museum, an old ship similar to a whaling vessel was anchored nearby and made into a small whaling museum. The old Pioneer Inn, center of activity at the Point, was refurbished to become a popular inn where medium-priced rooms for less affluent and more adventurous visitors were available. A thriving artists' colony soon settled in and around Lahaina, led by Maui's most famous artist, Tadashi Sato. Every Saturday, many of the artists of Lahaina held an exhibition under the banyan tree and even the most routine and hastily painted landscapes seemed to sell as fast as they were produced.

The old town of Lahaina took on new life, its streets crowded at all seasons with the thousands who jet out from mainland America to seek the sun and the fun.

Kihei

The condominium became the hallmark of Maui development along with the classy new tourist hotels such as the Sheraton-Maui (built on Ka-hekili's old jumping off place), and the Royal Lahaina at Kaanapali. As late as 1970, virgin beaches still stretched for miles from Ma'alaea along past Kihei all the way to Makena. Except for a couple of condominiums, there were no high-rise buildings and the Kihei road wove through scenic views of the sea and the great sweep of Haleakala's western ramparts. In a few short years, high-rise apartment hotels and condominiums, many of them looking more like foursquare penitentiary buildings than vacation resorts, crowded the shore. One writer described the skyline of Kihei as "a broken picket fence."

The hills above Kihei, dry, stony, lava-strewn areas where only the hardy thorn tree once grew, in a few short years became the abode of a hundred millionaires who built modern houses with picture windows framing spectacular views of Kaho'olawe, Molokai, and the broken skyline of Kihei below. The single road serving Kiehei, now solid with condominiums, shopping centers, a McDonald's, and temporary real estate offices at every corner, became jammed with traffic which seemed bumper to bumper at all hours.

It was partially blamed on the fact that Kihei was owned by many proprietors or speculators, each with individual plans uncoordinated with general planning, and partly on the failure of the County planners to hold the line against the runaway development. Kihei became the model for the wrong way to go about expansion.

Wailea

For many years, Alexander and Baldwin had been sitting on the golden egg called Wailea, acquired along with Matson Navigation Company in the early Sixties. It was on past Kihei on the dry leeward side and consisted of 1,500 acres of ancient lava fields covered with a forest of spiny kiawe and festooned with a series of white sand beaches. It was served by one dusty jeep road and the beaches were deserted. Even on a Sunday, a single family might find they could have an entire beach to themselves.

About 1970, the management of Alexander and Baldwin set out to find partners to share the risk of developing the Wailea property into a first-class resort. The first deal fell through, but later Northwestern Mutual Life Insurance Company joined Alexander and Baldwin. In principle, the companies decided on quality all along the line. A total, almost self-sufficient "resort destination" was planned around a spectacular golf course. Low rise was basic to the plan and there were to be hotels, a shopping center, a golf club, restaurants.

By this time the preservation movement was at its peak, and Wailea was planned by architects and landscape architects to enhance the beauty of the place and preserve its best features. The Bishop Museum was called in to survey the site in the interests of historic preservation. Remains of an old

Hawaiian village with a small *heiau* and the foundations of a chief's house were cleared and set aside for restoration as a cultural center. However, other priorities, especially a new eighteen-hole golf course, a shopping center, a second hotel, and new increments of apartments, delayed the cultural center plan.

The third increment of apartments was sold out to people who waited in line for a drawing, winners of which were permitted to acquire an apartment for anywhere from $125,000 for the lowest-priced apartments to $230,000 for a two-story townhouse. By April 15, 1978 over a thousand names had been entered for a drawing for 148 apartments.

Kapalua

The elegant development at Kapalua on Maui Land and Pineapple's lands, announced in 1971, was built in increments of expensive low-rise habitat-type condominiums (The Bay Villas) overlooking the beaches on Maui's northwest tip. A second cluster of villa-garden type apartments surround the golf course which curls about the brow of Pineapple Hill just beyond Napili.

Both Wailea and Kapalua profited by the mistakes at Kihei and the County administration seemed to have learned a lesson or two from what happened there.

The Role Of The County

During the Sixties and Seventies, the County administration grew rapidly, its services, its concerns involved in nearly every aspect of the lives of its citizens. The County budget rose to $24,258,663 by 1977 and carried 1,208 persons on its payroll.

The Mayor's Annual Report for 1976-1977 stated it this way:

> For many years, Maui county has had an institution at the center of its day to day life. For most of those years, the institution around which the community revolved was the plantation or ranch. (They) . . . built the houses, supplied the jobs, sold the merchandise and provided the wherewithal for recreation and leisure activities.
>
> After World War II, the plantations and ranches began to concentrate on developing and strengthening themselves into modern agribusiness firms. As the plantations and ranches moved away from being an all-powerful "father" in Maui County, they left holes in housing, public service, recreation and business stimulation.
>
> The County stepped in as a friend, partner and extension of the community itself. The County found itself required to replace the plantations and ranches in cradling the community. Under the old Board of Supervisors and, later the County Council and the Mayor, the County has attempted to fill the gaps left by the plantations and ranches.

The Mayor's report put the problem this way: "In its role as planner, the County is a tightrope walker, treading its way along between two considerable forces. On one extreme there are those who long for the so-called 'good old days' when space appeared to be plentiful but jobs were hard to find. On the other extreme, there are those who want to make as much money as rapidly as possible and hang the consequences. . . . Somewhere in between the extremes there is a balance to be struck, decisions to be finalized, implementation to be done.

"The balance in Maui County's government comes from the belief that a halt in development means unemployment for today's children tomorrow and, at the same time, development must be controlled to prevent these children from being forced to live in a concrete and asphalt tomorrow."

The Private Sector

The success of the County government and its increasingly powerful role in governing the island of Maui has been partly, at least, due to a working partnership between the landowners (the plantations, ranches, and now the big resort developers) and the County Administration.

The latter through planning, through regulation, and through "deals" or agreements with the landowners and builders, is able to modify the worst aspects of unbridled growth: to insist on "quality growth" (whatever that may be), to modify restrictions in return for providing housing for the workers, trading of land for County parks, or beach access. The management of growth, however, is difficult to maintain and while a boom in real estate sweeps Maui, it is difficult for middle- and lower-income people in the island to find homes of their own. Most of the islands' residents, oldtimers and newcomers are concerned about the preservation of the island's unique environment.

The environmentalists on Maui, fortunately, became active early in the 1960's. Persons as far apart in fame and fortune as Tony Hodges and Laurence Rockefeller fought to preserve the natural beauty of the Valley Island. Hodges, a young man who was president of Life of The Land, fought for preservation with very limited means for nearly a decade, not just for Maui but for all Hawaii though his home base was Maui.

Laurence Rockefeller, along with Sam Pryor, former vice-president of Pan-American, who led the movement, Hamilton and Jean McCaughey who owned a large portion of land, and Hana's remarkable doctor, Milton Howell, were the prime movers in saving the unique Kipahulu Valley and the beautiful waterfalls and pools which flow out of it into the sea. Charles Lindberg helped in the preservation and came to live and die in the valley where he is buried. These men gave money or raised it to save this area from exploitation.

They arranged for it to become a part of Maui's unique Haleakala National Park which includes the crater and now stretches far below the eastern rim to include the valley and the Seven Pools. Even so, Hana and the Kipahulu area face the problems of handling 500 visitors a day who negotiate the narrow winding Hana road and eighteen miles of the even narrower road beyond Hana to the Seven Pools. Visitors to Lindberg's grave at the tiny Kipahulu Church add to the traffic problems. The wealthy haoles and the many Hawaiians who live along "The Gold Coast" (Hana to Kipahulu) are concerned as the tide of visitors moves along the narrow roadway in their rented Toyotas and Datsuns.

Interest in preservation and the roots of the past have led to the development of cultural activities especially to revival of the cultural past of the native Hawaiians. Classes in Hawaiiana from history to hula have become popular with all ages on Maui. Hawaiian music and dance have always been popular but are even more so today as are studies in language, crafts, anthropology, and archaeology. The greatest interest is in authentic Hawaiiana rather than the over-modernized versions.

A revival of demands for Hawaiianization and return to old values and especially return of the land, has centered on Maui in an organized movement of protest against the Navy's use of the deserted island of Kaho'olawe as a practice bombing site. Leaders of the movement, all Hawaiian or part-Hawaiian, have landed on Kaho'olawe to flout Navy regulations and to publicize their protest. Most Maui residents appear to favor the return of Kaho'olawe to the control of Maui County and the Mayor himself went ashore with members of the protesting organization to survey the situation.* There is disagreement on the methods that should be used to acquire the island and the uses it might be put to.

Part of Maui's charm lies in the contrasts—between the lazy Polynesian-tropical island life-style and that of a life-style which calls for hard work; between the skyscrapers and mass tours of the tourist resorts and the wilderness of Nahiku. This contrast is found in the great variety of terrain which fascinates those who reside on the island. From Kula, with a climate like New England in Spring with need for fireplaces at night, it is only twenty minutes by car to warm tropical beaches and swimming in waters at seventy-one or seventy-two degrees. There are areas where the rains are heavy in winter and others where it seldom ever rains. One of the missionaries wrote a hundred years ago, "It never rains in Lahaina." And . . . everything grows; yet, most vegetables and even meats are brought 2000 miles across the Pacific. The exceptions are the famous Maui onions, the local lettuce, Kula cabbages, limes, avocadoes, and papayas. Maui could be more self-sufficient in foodstuffs if more agricultural land (and water) were to be available. As it is, the arable land is covered with sugar and pineapple and drought can be a problem. More and more land is being used for resorts and housing developments.

The two foremost dangers Maui would have to face in the future would be 1) that a depression or other "disaster" were to cut off the tourist trade, or 2) that the tourist "invasion" plus lack of control by the people of Maui and their government were to ruin the environment.

---

* Several years ago, an unexploded bomb was found in one of the Mayor's pastures across from Kaho'olawe apparently dropped by a Navy plane by mistake!

The people of Maui are its greatest asset. They are adaptable and are still among the most friendly people on earth. They are also an educated and sophisticated people, and while they like to be prosperous and make a good living, they will not let their special island be ruined by greed.

Na mau ke ea o ka aina ka pono, "The life of the land is preserved by righteousness."

A NOTE ON SOURCES

Research, specifically for this book, began in Honolulu in 1973 and consisted at first of general readings in Pacific and Hawaiian history, which led to a particular interest in Captain Cook and the Third Voyage. Returning to Maui in 1975, renewed interest in local history led to sources on Maui itself and especially to the Hawaiian Room at the Kahului Library, which has a good collection of books, periodicals, and documents. A rare find there is a copy of the original publication, *Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, 1776-1780,* three volumes published in London in 1784 and containing the journal kept first by Cook and later, after his death, by Lieutenant James King. Volume II contains William Bligh's drawing of the island made as the ships lay off Kahului in November 1778. Some of the sources were found at the Wailuku and Lahaina public libraries and at the library of Maui Community College.

A course on the history of Maui given for Chaminade College helped in gathering data, especially as field trips to historic sites were used to supplement the written materials.

The Bishop Museum Library contains rich resources for the historian, although separate catalog listings for Maui are not extensive. The Honolulu Academy of Arts has photographs available at small cost, and there are, besides, the fine collection of documents and photographs of old prints and drawings available from the Archives of Hawaii.

Visits and searches were conducted in the summers of 1977 and 1978 in England in the British Museum (General) Library and the Manuscript Library; in the Museum of Natural History, where the watercolors of William Ellis (Third Voyage) are found; and especially the Admiralty series of the Public Record Office, London (PRO), where the original logs and journals of the *Resolution* and *Discovery* are found. The Museum of Mankind in Burlington Gardens, a part of the British Museum, has a very fine collection of Hawaiian art on exhibition. This contains some beautiful pieces such as feather cloaks and helmets (on loan from the British Royal Family), carvings, and other artifacts from the voyages of Cook, Portlock and Dixon, Vancouver, Byron and others.

The British Museum "store," or storeroom, outside London contains over a thousand Hawaiian items from which approximately 300 were selected by anthropologist Adrienne Kaeppler for the Cook Bicentennial Exhibit (1978) at the Bishop Museum. It was disappointing to find that the artists, Webber and Ellis, the former having done the best known and earliest drawings and paintings of Hawaii, apparently did not make sketches while the ships cruised and traded off Maui, November 26-30, 1778. This makes Bligh's drawing of the island unique.

Several weeks in the summer of 1978 were spent in further research in the British Museum Library, the National Maritime Museum at Greenwich, and the Maritime Museums of Hull and Whitby where many of the logs of English whalers were examined and some new material on Captain Cook was found. The logs of Vancouver's voyage were consulted in the new Public Records facility at Kew where automation has speeded the process of research to a matter of minutes instead of the hours required in the old facility at Chancery Lane.

Logs of twelve whale ships in the Peabody Museum of Salem, Massachusetts, were read for Maui references and the log of the ship *Massachusetts* yielded the most detailed description of the Olowalu Massacre. The museum's library has a separate category for Maui in its card catalog. The references are under the heading spelled in the old form, "Mowee."

The small collection of books and documents in the Museum at Wailuku (Maui Historical Society) includes the remarkable notebooks of Elspeth Sterling containing information or listings of important historic sites on Maui. The historical files maintained by Inez Ashdown in the Planning Office in the County Building proved valuable.

Finally, there is the material stored above the office of the Lahaina Restoration Foundation. The material, though not catalogued, is not difficult to use and consists of boxes approximately eight inches square labeled simply, "Lahaina, general," "Missionaries," "Hawaiians," etc. containing quotes from general publications, periodicals, diaries, journals and logs, neatly typed on 5 x 8 sheets. Many of these typescripts have been copied from originals or secondary sources in the Library of the Hawaiian Mission Children's Society in Honolulu. There is a wealth of material there for the researcher willing to dig in and, added to the excellent study of the Seamen's Hospital that the Frosts did for the Restoration, *Rendezvous in Lahaina*, this is probably the richest and most concentrated resource on Maui's history to be found.

Company records, annual reports, the Wailuku Sugar Company's history, *Centennial 1862-1962*, the local newspapers, taped interviews, the Mayor's Bicentennial Report (1976) and the 1977 report were sources for valuable material for this history of the Island of Maui.

References for individual chapters are listed in the section following the Basic References.

BASIC REFERENCES BIBLIOGRAPHY

General Histories, Logs, and Journals

Alexander, W. D., *Brief History of the Hawaiian People,* American Book, 1899.

Anderson, Bern, *Surveyor of the Sea, The Life and Voyages of Captain George Vancouver,* University of Washington Press, Seattle, 1960.

Arago, Jacques, *Narrative of a Voyage Round the World* during the years 1817-18-19, and 20, London, 1823.

Ashdown, Inez, *Ke Alaloa O Maui, The Broad Highway of Maui,* Wailuku, Hawaii, 1971.

Atlas of Hawaii, University Press of Hawaii, 1973.

Barrow, Tui Terrance, *Captain Cook in Hawaii,* Island Heritage, Honolulu, 1976.

Beaglehole, J. C., *The Journals of Captain James Cook,* Volume III in two parts "The Voyage of the *Resolution* and *Discovery,* 1776-1780," Hakluyt Society, Cambridge, 1955-69.

———, *The Life of Captain James Cook,* Stanford University Press, 1974.

Bingham, Hiram, *A Residence of Twenty-One Years in the Sandwich Islands,* Praeger, N. Y., 1969.

Bird, Isabella L., *Six Months in the Sandwich Islands,* (1873) University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1964.

British Public Record Office, Admiralty 51, #4557, Log of HMS *Discovery,* #4558 Cook's log of *Resolution* by William Langon; *Discovery* log by William Shuttleworth, Midshipman, Admiralty 55/26 master's log HMS *Discovery,* 1790-94 by Harry Humphreys contains handsome drawings by Humphreys who was midshipman, master's mate and finally master of Vancouver's ship *Discovery,* Admiralty 52 #4054 is the log of the *Blonde,* June 10, 1824 to Dec. 15, 1826.

Buck, Sir Peter H., *Explorers of the Pacific,* Bishop Museum, Honolulu, 1953.

Byron, George Anson Baron, *Voyage of HMS Blonde, to the Sandwich Islands in the Years 1824-25,* London, 1826. This volume was missing from the Library of the British Museum in 1978.

Campbell, Archibald, *A Voyage Round the World from 1806 to 1812,* facsimile reproduction of the Third American Edition of 1822. University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1967.

Cheever, Rev. Henry T., *Life in the Sandwich Islands, or The Heart of the Pacific, as it was and is.* Barnes, New York, 1851.

Coffman, Tom, *Catch a Wave, Hawaii's New Politics,* Honolulu, 1972.

Cook, James, *A Voyage to the Pacific Ocean,* London, 1776-1780, N. Hughs, London 1784. Volumes I & II by Cook: Volume III by Capt. James King.

Crowningburg-Amalu, Samuel, *Jack Burns, A Portrait in Transition,* Mamalahoa Foundation, Honolulu, 1974.

Daws, Gavan, *Shoal of Time, A History of the Hawaiian Islands,* University Press of Hawaii, 1968.

Day, A. Grove, *Hawaii and Its People,* Meredith, N. Y., 1968.

Dibble, S., *History of the Sandwich Islands,* Lahainaluna, 1843.

Dodge, Ernest S., *Beyond the Capes, Pacific Exploration from Captain Cook to the Challenger* (1776-1877), Little, Brown, Boston, 1971.

———, *New England and the South Seas,* Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1965.

Ellis, William, *Journal of William Ellis, Narrative of a Tour of Hawaii,* reprint of the London 1827 edition and the Hawaii 1917 edition, Advertiser Publishing Co., Ltd. Honolulu, 1963.

Fornander, Abraham, *An Account of the Polynesian Race, Its Origins and Migrations and the Ancient History of the Hawaiian People to the Times of Kamehameha I.* Three volumes in one, Charles E. Tuttle, Rutland, Vermont, 1969.

———, *Antiquities,* Bishop Museum Memoirs, Fornander Collection of Hawaiian Antiquities and Folklore, Bishop Museum Press, Memoirs Volumes 4, 5 and 6, Honolulu, 1916-1917.

Frost and Frost, *Rendezvous in Lahaina,* A Study and Report on Seaman's Hospital, Lahaina Restoration Foundation, 1975.

Gowan, Rev. H. H., *The Paradise of the Pacific, Sketches of Hawaiian Scenery and Life,* Skeffington and Son, London, 1892. Sept. 1886-June 1889.

Grenfell, Price A., *The Explorations of Captain James Cook in the Pacific,* Dover Publications, New York, 1971.

Hawaii, State of, Department of Planning and Economic Development, Tourism in Hawaii, Volume I, Honolulu, 1972.

Hawaiian Journal of History, Hawaiian Historical Society, Honolulu.

Hopkins, Manley, *Hawaii,* London, 1862.

Ii, John Papa, *Fragments of Hawaiian History,* Bishop Museum Press, Honolulu, 1973.

Jarves, J., *History of the Sandwich Islands,* London, 1843.

Judd, Gerrit P., *Hawaii,* An Informal History, Collier Books, New York, 1961.

Kamakau, Samuel M., *Ruling Chiefs of Hawaii,* The Kamehameha School Press, Honolulu, 1961, and *Index* to Ruling Chiefs compiled by E. P. Sterling, Bishop Museum, 1974. The Index is essential in using Kamakau. We have followed throughout spelling of Hawaiian names in the Index. On p. 83, Sterling quotes Stokes regarding the unreliability of Kamakau's dates and the fact that they were not accepted by his native contemporaries.

Kuykendall, Ralph S., *The Hawaiian Kingdom,* Three Volumes, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1967.

Lahaina Restoration Foundation, Missionary Records and Notes from journals, letters, and published works referring to Maui and especially Lahaina history.

Ledyard, John, *Journal of Captain Cook's Last Voyage,* Oregon State, 1963.

Lind, Andrew W., *Hawaii's People,* third edition, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1967.

Liziansky, Urey, *A Voyage Round the World* in the years 1803, 04, 05 and 06. Booth, London 1814. Facsimile published by Da Capo Press, New York, 1968.

Lloyd, Christopher, *Pacific Horizons,* London, 1977.

MacDonald, Alexander, *Revolt in Paradise,* Daye, New York, 1944.

Malo, David, *Hawaiian Antiquities,* Bishop Museum Press, Honolulu, 1976.

Morrow, A. C. and Jack, *Maui, A Few Facts About the Valley Isle,* 1920.

Rydell, Raymond A., *Cape Horn to the Pacific,* Berkeley, 1952.

Samwell, David, *A Narrative of the Death of Captain James Cook,* in Hawaiian Historical Society reprints, #2.

Schoofs, Rev. Robert, ss.cc., *Pioneers of the Faith,* History of the Catholic Mission in Hawaii (1827-1940). Revised by Fay Wren Midkiff, Edited and Published by Louis Boeynaems, ss.cc., Honolulu, 1978.

Shirey, Orville C., *Americans,* The Story of the 442nd Combat Team, Infantry Journal Press, Washington, 1947.

Simpich, Frederick, *Anatomy of Hawaii,* Coward McCann, New York, 1971.

Simpson, Sir George, *Narrative of a Journey Round the World, 1841-1842,* London, 1847.

Sinclair, Marjorie, *Nahi-'ena-'ena,* University Press, Honolulu, 1976.

Smith, Bradford, *Yankees in Paradise,* Lippincott, New York, 1956.

Starbuck, Alexander, *History of the American Whale Fishery,* vols. 1 and 2, Argosy Antiquarian, New York, 1964.

Stearns, Harold T., *Geology of the State of Hawaii,* Pacific Books, Palo Alto, 1966.

Steegmuller, Francis, *The Two Lives of James Jackson Jarves,* Part one, Yale University Press, New Haven, 1951.

Stewart, Charles, *Journal of a Residence in the Sandwich Islands, 1823-1825,* University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1970.

Strauss, W. Patrick, *Americans in Polynesia, 1783-1842,* Michigan State, E. Lansing, 1963.

Valentin, François, *Voyages and Adventures of La Pérouse,* from the fourteenth edition of the F. Valentin Abridgement, Tours 1875, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1969.

Vancouver, George, *Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean and Round the World,* Amsterdam, N. Israel; New York, Da Capo, 1968, 3 volumes. Reprint of the London edition of 1798.

Wenkam, Robert, *Maui, The Last Hawaiian Place,* Friends of the Earth, San Francisco, 1970.

CHAPTER SOURCES

CHAPTER 1

Most of the material for this chapter can be found in general histories of Hawaii, among which Kuykendall, Kamakau, Fornander and Daws were most useful. Kuykendall's first chapter in Volume I called "A Glimpse of Ancient Hawaii," gives brief but excellent insight into the lives of the pre-contact Hawaiians.

My main sources on Maui, The Demigod are Luomala, K., *Maui-of-a-thousand tricks:* his oceanic and European biographers, Bishop Museum Bulletin "The Irresistible Maui," Honolulu 1949; Robert Wenkam, *Maui: The Last Hawaiian Place*, San Francisco, 1970, who gives a version of the story with several twists typical of Hawaiian humor; and Inez Ashdown, whose version comes straight from the older Hawaiian people of the Island who talk like it really did happen that way and not so very long ago at that. In the Ashdown version, Maui learned to make a fishing net, traveled the zigzag trail into the crater, then climbed the highest of the seven cones, or peaks, where he snared great La, the Sun, and advised him to travel more slowly. La agreed to do this for six months of the year and Maui released him. Thus, the Ko'olau gap was named after the fish net (ko-olau) and the Hele-mau Trail (zigzag trail) means Maui traveled steadfastly. People mistakenly call the trail Hale-mai'u, meaning grass house, which makes no sense at all. Place names in Hawaiian were a way of telling a story like this "to make sense and to have a moral. Translate the place names correctly and the story is told so." (Ashdown to author, January 1978.)

For the geological formation of the island, I used Harold T. Stearns, *Geology of the State of Hawaii,* Pacific Books, Palo Alto, 1966. A lyrical description of the island as it would be seen from the air makes a fine introduction to his main section, Chapter 7, pages 151-165.

For the Polynesians and their settlements in the Islands, I used Fornander, the general histories, and had the benefit of several talk-sessions with Dr. Kenneth Emory, Senior Anthropologist, Bishop Museum, whose report, "Endangered Hawaiian Archaeological Sites Within Maui County," February 1972, Report 72-2, Bishop Museum, Honolulu, was also helpful.

Herb Kawainui Kane and his book, *Voyage*, Island Heritage, Honolulu, 1976, as well as his article and paintings under the title of "The Pathfinders," in *National Geographic*, Vol. 146, No. 6, Dec. 1974, gave good background on the great Polynesian voyagers.

The story of the Pi'ilani ruling chiefs of Maui is condensed from the first two chapters of Kamakau. It may serve to give some hint as to the dynastic system of ruling families and as a preface to the next chapter which tells how another strong family of chiefs came to dominate the island of Maui and through their descendants, to play an important role in the formation and development of a true Hawaiian kingdom.

CHAPTER 2

For this chapter, I relied mainly on Kamakau's *Ruling Chiefs of Hawaii.* In addition, I found the series of newspaper articles "The Story of Maui Royalty" by Sammy Crowningburg-Amalu quite useful for references though like Kamakau it is based on oral sources and should be used with caution.

For bringing this source to my attention, I am indebted to June Gutmanis who gave me copies of her clippings of the articles from the Honolulu *Advertiser.* These appeared in a series of 53 articles between April and June 1956 under the pseudonym Kapiikauinamoku.

Volume II of Fornander's *Origins of the Polynesian People* was also a source for Chapter 2.

CHAPTER 3

My main sources for the pre-Cook Spanish contacts with the Hawaiian islands are the journals of La Pérouse, and Dr. Rollin, Surgeon with the French Expedition, Vancouver, and those of Cook and members of his Third Voyage, especially James Burney.

The most important source I found for early accounts by Hawaiians was the narrative and journal of the English missionary, William Ellis. Ellis followed up on clues he found in talking to chiefs and others on

Hawaii in 1822. Hawaiian accounts of a white priest, Pa'ao, who landed at Kohala on Hawaii perhaps a hundred years before Cook are found in several sources of which Ellis' is one of the best.

There are several versions of the landing of a boat at Kealakekua Bay without a sail but covered with a canopy of hides or white tapa. Seven white men were said to have arrived in the boat. They went up into the mountains where they dwelt for a time. They were described in one version as departing from the bay in their boat, not to be seen again. While they lived in Hawaii, Opili, the son of Pa'ao, also a powerful priest, was sent to communicate with these men and was able to do so because he knew their language. Another version tells of these white men settling in Hawaii and marrying Hawaiian women. There are still some Hawaiians who claim descent from them.

Ellis was told that the principal person among the white men was called Manahini. This is a Polynesian word for stranger, visitor, or guest. In modern Hawaiian, the word is spelled Malahini. (Ellis, page 318.)

The tradition of a Spanish shipwreck on the coast of Maui is still strong among the Hawaiians. The chief who crossed his fingers and pointed to the land when the officers on the *Discovery* admired his iron dagger, may have been trying to describe an anchor rather than a cross, though the cross is the usual interpretation. John Young, the adviser of Kamehameha the First, who arrived at Kona in 1786 and lived the rest of his life in Hawaii, once spoke of a large iron anchor that had been sitting on Maui for many years before Cook's arrival. One of the chiefs on Hawaii told Ellis that there was a tradition of a ship having touched at Maui prior to Cook's arrival. Other natives denied the story (p. 319).

The reference to iron daggers observed off Maui on November 27, 1778 is from the Journal of James Burney taken from a typescript copy in the Bishop Museum: "The chiefs had two long pieces of iron shaped like skewers, well painted which we supposed to have been got from the Spaniards. One of the Indians held his 2 forefingers across each other and pointed to the land which we construed into the Spaniards having set up a cross on shore. These circumstances however fell far short of a proof."

In any case, I believe that the Spanish knew the islands were here but, for some unknown reason, kept that knowledge secret. The most convincing evidence is the Spanish map which Cook, La Pérouse, and Vancouver had available on their voyages and the general belief on the part of both the latter as they explored the area of the map, that the Los Majos islands of the Spanish map were, in fact, the windward islands of Hawaii.

The map shown in the plates is from the collection of my friend, Darrell Nielson, who purchased it in Paris in 1970. Though the map may have been published later, it appears to be a facsimile of an earlier Spanish map. The date on the map is 1587, nearly thirty years after Juan Guetano is supposed to have discovered the Los Majos Islands, and 181 years *before* Cook. One hundred and eighty-one years is a long time, long enough for all memory of the Spanish ships to be forgotten by the Hawaiians; long enough for the secret knowledge of the discovery to have been forgotten or lost by the Spanish.

I do not doubt that the truth of the matter will become known as research continues. Discussion of the theory of Spanish discovery is found in practically every work on the Hawaiian Islands. One of the most interesting of these is found in the Bern Anderson book on the life and voyages of Capt. George Vancouver, *Surveyor of the Sea.*

The Cook journals are, naturally, the most important sources for Chapter 3, along with Prof. Beaglehole's *Life of Captain James Cook.* The journal of David Samwell, Surgeon's mate on board H.M.S. *Discovery* is my source for the visit of Ka-hekili to the ship on November 27, 1778.

Cook's own descriptions of the meetings with the Maui people are quoted from the publication of 1784, *Voyage to the Pacific Ocean 1776-1780,* listed under Basic References.

The description of the events at Kealakekua Bay and Cook's death is a composite of many accounts, among them, those of King, Burney, Ledyard, Samwell, and others. The nineteenth century accounts of the Congregational missionaries were studied along with the accounts of modern historians including especially Kuykendall, Daws, Barrow, and Beaglehole.

Ledyard, Gore, and five others of the Cook Expedition, were undoubtedly the first Americans to visit Hawaii.

Kamakau, who was strongly under the influence of the missionaries, appears to have followed the version of Cook's death which appeared in Dibble's *History* (1843) and since discredited. The missionary version was that Cook "was not a properly devout Christian but a presumptuous worm who accepted the worship of ignorant savages at the same time he infected them with venereal disease, and for this the true God struck him down." (Daws, p. 25) (Kamakau, pp. 92-104)

Villiers wrote that research among the Hawaiians while witnesses were still living showed that Cook was received as a great white chief. He suffered the priestly mumbo-jumbo which was a part of the Polynesian way of life in which all priests and chiefs seemed to be accepted as descended from the gods. Cook put up with it in the interest of good relations, and for the welfare of his crews. "He had done that before. It was the only sensible policy."

There is no question Cook was regarded as a high chief with divine Lono powers. Even after death, his body was treated as that of a high chief with powerful *mana*.

Another interesting footnote to the visit of King Ka-lani-'o-pu'u to Cook's flagship is found in Fornander's *Origins*. He cites Hawaiian accounts to the effect that the Hawaiian chief went aboard the *Resolution* off Wailua in the Ko'olau District. Ka-lani-'o-pu'u was in that area at the time but no Hawaiian account mentions that he went aboard personally, according to Fornander. However, he says that all accounts concur that Kamehameha went aboard and passed the night on the ship. These accounts describe a great wailing when Kamehameha did not return that night (November 30, 1778) as it was believed that he had been abducted. There was great rejoicing when he returned the next day.

Local tradition at Wailua-Keanae has it that it was from here that Cook's ships were first sighted. This is probably the case as the ships approached the Maui coast near there, then turned west to the Kahului area on the second day.

Further arguments for the Spanish theory are found in Sir George Simpson's *Narrative*, published in London in 1847. He believed the high and most southerly of the islands, Hawaii, was most likely to have attracted the attention of the Spanish voyagers and that La Mesa on the old chart "no doubt describes Mauna Loa."

CHAPTER 4

As with the three previous chapters, the "backbone" for this chapter on the final battles is provided by Kamakau, and Daws. The sources for the Olowalu Massacre are Janion, Aubrey, *The Olowalu Massacre and Other Stories,* Heritage Press, Honolulu, 1976; the Xerox copy of the article from the Boston newspaper *Columbian Sentinel,* in the Bishop Museum; the Journal of Vancouver, and the log of the whaleship *Massachusetts.* Accounts of the massacre are included in all the general histories, and many of the missionary and 19th century visitors' journals. The blind injustice and cruelty of Captain Metcalf's massacre of innocent people on the coast of Maui in 1786 is a deplorable blot on the history of the early relations of Hawaii and the United States.

I have tried to simplify as much as possible the complicated succession of battles between Kamehameha and Ka-hekili which ended with the battle of Nu'uanu. The details are to be found in every history of Hawaii from Kamakau to Daws.

Fornander and Kamakau both wrote extensively on the reign of Ka-hekili. It is interesting to compare their accounts with those of Samwell, the first foreigner (haole) to describe this durable Hawaiian king, and Captains Nathaniel Portlock and George Vancouver, who knew Ka-hekili well in his last years. The English descriptions antedate Kamakau by half a century and were written with only the slightest background on the Hawaiians and their society.

I have drawn on Kamakau's Chapter XIII "Last Days of Ka-hekili," though modifying in this account Kamakau's tendency to emphasize the most gory details of the battles of the chiefs. One instance of this is his description of the disposition of the slain Hawaiian chiefs and their warriors after Ka-hekili defeated them at Hana. The corpses were burned in the *imus* (ovens) below the Kau'iki fortress. This treatment was not necessarily considered savage or cruel. It was part of the practice of honorable disposal of the bodies of slain chiefs. As has been pointed out, the same "honors" were paid to Cook's body at Kealakekua Bay. The burning of bodies after battle may also have been practiced for sanitary reasons.

CHAPTER 5

The journals of Vancouver, Portlock, and Dixon are available in the Kahului Library where I consulted them for Chapter 5. These volumes are facsimile reproductions of the originals published in the late eighteenth century.

The exploits of La Pérouse were ignored by American writers in the nineteenth century and not until 1959 was he given proper notice in the form of two American books of exploration: Charles N. Rudkin, *The First French Expedition to California: La Pérouse in 1786,* Glen Dawson, Los Angeles, 1959 and Edward W. Allen, *The Vanishing Frenchman: The Mysterious Disappearance of La Pérouse* (Tuttle, Rutland, Vt., 1959).

Since then, the University Press of Hawaii has published a translation of an abridged version of La Pérouse's report: *Voyages and Adventures of La Pérouse* from the fourteenth edition of the F. Valentin Abridgement, Tours 1875, translated by Julius S. Gassner, University of Hawaii Press, 1969.

The translator points out several reasons for the lack of attention paid to La Pérouse in our histories. The original report was in French, published in Paris in 1797, and despite a number of translations in English (including one American edition published in Boston in 1801), the literature on La Pérouse was mostly in French and received scant notice in the United States. Another factor was the French Revolution and the fall of Louis XVI who had ordered the expedition. The wars of Napoleon followed and the news of La Pérouse was eclipsed by events.

Finally, though the discoveries of La Pérouse and his scientists aboard the French frigates, *Boussole* and *Astrolabe,* were of some importance to the opening of the Pacific, particularly their acute observations of the peoples visited in the Pacific lands (some of the journals read like modern anthropological research), the Admiral, his two ships, his officers and men disappeared into the Pacific without a trace. None survived to tell the tale, and it was forty years after the expedition left Botany Bay in Australia, that the fate of the French explorers was at last discovered.

Fortunately, the journals of the voyage were not lost. The French

Admiral sent them back to France, first by de Lesseps overland from Kamchatka, and again, just before he disappeared, by the English Commodore Phillip, who delivered the documents from Australia to Paris.

The journals included the diaries of his officers, in particular the journal of the ship's surgeon, Dr. Rollin, which is a valuable supplement to that of La Pérouse. The expedition included some of France's most capable scientists, men of the Enlightenment, and their journals are among the most interesting to be found in the annals of the Pacific.

Vancouver's death and the appearance of his journals were sadly neglected in Britain and abroad. The Napoleonic Wars occupied the British for seventeen years after his death. However, the main reason for Vancouver's unwarranted neglect as a naval commander, explorer, and navigator, was due to the so-called "Camelford Affair." This affair was dragged through the press and the courts and involved an accusation by the young Lord Camelford, who was of the noble Pitt family.

This man accused Captain Vancouver of having him flogged during his service under Vancouver as a midshipman. These men, though not officers, were candidates for officer rank and flogging of midshipmen was not countenanced in the British Navy. The high family connections and the ferocity of Camelford's attack undoubtedly hurt Vancouver's reputation. A cartoon of the time illustrating a physical attack on Capt. Vancouver by the young English lord on a London street, added to Vancouver's near disgrace as it depicted him as a coward cringing from the blows of Lord Camelford's cane.

This affair embittered the last years of Vancouver's life and probably hastened his death as he was already a seriously ill man at the time. For more on Vancouver and the assessment of his life, see Bern Anderson, *Surveyor of the Sea, The Life and Voyages of Captain George Vancouver,* University of Washington Press, Seattle, 1960. Chapter 9 "The Islands of Los Majos" is one of the most persuasive arguments in support of the theory of an earlier discovery of Hawaii by the Spanish. Reading these journals one cannot help but gain respect for Vancouver himself, but also for Kamehameha and the Maui King Ka-hekili, about whom there is very interesting material.

In Vancouver's journal, he describes a visit by Ka-hekili and his retinue off Waikiki. During this visit, night came on rather quickly and the surf was so high on the shore that Ka-hekili asked permission to stay on board *Discovery* overnight. Vancouver had a policy of no overnight visitors while in the Islands, but made an exception for the King on this particular night.

The captain then provided a fireworks display on board and tells in his log that the chiefs kept him awake talking most of the night about the fireworks. When Vancouver arose, he found the brother, Ka'eo, still aboard but Ka-hekili had "jumped ship" at an early hour without ceremony. Ka'eo apologized for his brother's hasty departure but Vancouver was apparently put out and wrote that he was "apprehensive that some accidental offense had been given him." Ka'eo assured the captain "of the contrary and that such was his common practice of retiring." (Vancouver, Voyage of Discovery, II, 199.)

Nothing further is said by Vancouver about this incident. However, Menzies, botanist with the expedition, describes a harrowing scene which records the reason for Ka-hekili's sudden departure. Vancouver flew into such a rage over a most trivial matter, so frightening the king that he dashed into Menzie's cabin and "instantly jumping into his canoe through the port hole, paddled to the shore and saw no more of him." (Menzies *Journal,* p. 561, as quoted in Anderson, *Op. cit.* p. 148.)

This story compares with that of Captain Portlock who describes Ka-hekili off Waikiki jumping overboard in a high sea and recovering his canoe. The year was 1794 in both cases and Ka-hekili, the cliff leaper, was considered to be sixty by Vancouver and as much as eighty-seven by Kamakau.

Ka-hekili must have been one of those remarkably strong Hawaiian chiefs who had constitutions of iron and who managed to survive the most dangerous vicissitudes of the Hawaiian wars.

The sport of *lelekawa* (cliff leaping) seems to have kept Ka-hekili in good shape. He had several favorite leaping cliffs on Maui: Kahakuloa was one; another the cliff called Pali Ka-hekili at Keanae, where local tradition has it the king injured his genitals so that he could no longer father children. Nevertheless, Vancouver was introduced to a son of Ka-hekili at Maui in 1794, whose age he judged to be fifteen. This would have made Ka-hekili seventy-two at the time of this son's birth. There is a large black stone below the Pali Ka-hekili at Keanae and its name is Pohaku-ule-o-Ka-hekili, or freely translated, "The stone of Ka-hekili's penis."

Local Maui tradition tells of at least one famous leap by this rugged king from the dangerous burial cliff at Keka'a Point, the cliff now occupied by the Hotel Sheraton-Maui. The people of the Kaanapali district were "raising Hell" with the sailors from the Lahaina roadstead, drinking, carousing, neglecting the King's work. Ka-hekili mounted the cliff, a sacred burial cliff, drawing attention of all the people to himself and his death-defying intention of leaping off. The people believed in his divine origin and this was a dramatic show of his god-like character. The cliff itself was known as *'uhane lele,* "the leaping off place of the soul" or "the soul leaping" (to heaven). Ka-hekili survived the famous leap and, at least for a time, restored his people to their sober tasks. This story is one that was frequently told to Mrs. Inez Ashdown by descendants of Ka-hekili and others. Every evening at sundown, the Sheraton-Maui reproduces Ka-hekili's act in a ceremony of lighting the torches, blowing the conch shell and culminating in a spectacular leap by a hotel employee off the Keka'a cliff.

I found a good summary of the French landing on Maui in a small book published in 1959 by the Maui Historical Society, Wailuku. It is called *La Pérouse on Maui,* by Mathurin Dondo. In studying the journals, I came across the fact that the French ships *Boussole* and *Astrolabe* were tacking on the southeast side of Maui, anchoring, and making their landing at La Pérouse Bay at the very same moment that Portlock and Dixon of the British Expedition were tacking off the Maui coast, and that from May 29 to June 1st, 1786, the four large European naval vessels could almost literally have bumped into each other; yet were not seen by one another. I have found no other source for this observation.

The journal of Nathaniel Portlock and that of George Dixon are especially interesting for their descriptions of meetings with King Ka-hekili at the time he resided on and ruled Oahu. Dixon spelled the King's name "Tereteere."

In addition to the journals of the European explorers, I read Kuykendall, Kamakau, and Fornander, along with more recent histories of Pacific exploration; i.e., Ernest Dodge's *Beyond the Capes*, Daws' *Shoal* *of Time,* and John Dunmore, *French Explorers in the Pacific,* Volume I, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1965.

For Maui's history, Vancouver has provided in his journal the most detailed information on persons and events during those crucial years when Hawaii's interminable wars were finally coming to a close. His journal, and those of his officers aboard H.M.S. *Discovery* and *Chatham,* are not only the most important historical sources available for those years, but are especially interesting because they provide a gratifying and positive chapter in the early relations between Hawaii and the westerners who were by then coming to Hawaii's shores in significant numbers.

CHAPTER 6

In addition to the general histories, I used many other sources, mostly missionary narratives or journals. Among these are Charles Stewart, Hiram Bingham, and William Richards, whose works are listed in the bibliography. An interesting account of Ka-'ahu-manu's life is Kathleen Mellen's *Magnificent Matriarch*, Hastings, 1952. There are numerous though brief descriptions of the favorite wife in the journals of ships' captains who met her either at Kona or Honolulu. One of the most interesting is the touching story Vancouver tells of how he brought the estranged pair—the king and Ka-'ahu-manu, back together by arranging a meeting in the cabin of his flagship.

All descriptions and contemporary portraits of this Queen show her as being a very large woman in the mold of a Polynesian-Hawaiian Queen. Young Ebenezer Townsend, Jr. described her in 1798 as "a large woman with a great deal of the cloth of the country around her, which she also soon got rid of . . . ." At that moment, she was a visitor on the sealing ship *Neptune.* (*Paradise of the Pacific.* November 1936, page 23.)

Alexander's description (*Brief History of the Hawaiian People,* American Book, 1899) of "The New Ka-'ahu-manu" is interesting. "Scarcely less remarkable was the change in the character of Ka-'ahu-manu the Regent. Superior in intellect and in decision of character to most of the chiefs, she was haughty, overbearing and cruel before her conversion. At first she treated the missionaries with disdain but her mind became interested first in the novel arts of reading and writing and then in the new doctrines which they taught, and finally her heart and conscience were completely won over.

"As she did nothing by halves, the change in her conduct and in her treatment of her people was so striking that they called her 'the new Ka-'ahu-manu.' From the beginning of the Year 1825 she devoted herself with her wonted energy to the improvement of her countrymen, made frequent tours among the islands to promote education and to urge the people to the practice of industry and virtue." (p. 190)

Stewart, Richards, and Bingham are also the chief sources on Ke-opu-o-lani. Also Ellis, the Englishman who administered the last rites when the Sacred Queen lay dying at Lahaina. These Yankee missionaries are our chief sources on the princess Nahi-'ena-'ena whose modern biographer is Marjorie Sinclair, *Nahi-'ena-'ena*, Univ. Press of Hawaii, Honolulu, 1976.

In this chapter I have mentioned that Kamehameha the First as he was dying appealed to his personal god (of war), Ku-kai-ili-moku. Though the Queen ordered destruction of the heiaus and images, the particular feather god-image sacred to the King was preserved as were other feather images of the Hawaiian war god. The image in the Bishop Museum, once in the possession of the American Board for Foreign Missions in Boston, is believed to be the one to which the dying king turned for help. Other fine specimens were preserved and are found in the collection of the British Museum of Mankind and in the Peabody Museum of Salem.

The quotation regarding the relationship between Kamehameha III and his sister is from the *Journal* of Elisha Loomis, Hawaii Mission Children's Society, pp. 15-16, quoted in Sinclair, M., *Hawaiian Journal of History*, Vol. 3, 1969.

Queen Ke-opu-o-lani is still mourned by royal descendants and her people. Each year special services are held to commemorate the sacred queen beside her tomb at Lahaina. *Maui News*, December 9, 1977, p. 2, "The Alii Gather."

Another source for this chapter was Missionary Letters, III, 877, Richards and Stewart, 1828, Hawaii Mission Children's Society, also Bishop Museum, and as found in typescripts in the files of the Lahaina Restoration Foundation. One especially interesting letter is that of Rev.

William Richards to Commander Wilkes of the U.S. Exploring Expedition.

Again, I have drawn on Kamakau's *Ruling Chiefs* for material in this chapter.

It seems remarkable in studying the lives of the two great queens from Maui to note their apparent harmonious and almost loving relationship. Two very very different Hawaiian Chiefesses, two very different women, married to the same man, in a juxtaposition of personalities. Perhaps the relationship sheds some light on the Hawaiian attitudes and culture, their ways of thinking and loving and of marriage and their raising of children.

Ke-opu-o-lani's father was Prince Kiwala'o who was slain by the hand of Ke-e-au-moku, the father of Ka-'ahu-manu. The young high chief, Kiwala'o, was the rightful heir to the kingdom of Hawaii which Kamehameha seized. One would think that Ke-opu-o-lani would have resented Ka-'ahu-manu. Yet Ka-'ahu-manu and Ke-opu-o-lani lived in perfect harmony after the death of Kamehameha. There seems to have been no jealousy on the part of Ke-opu-o-lani, the mother of the successor kings. Both of these kings, though of higher rank than Ka-'ahu-manu were each in turn dominated by Ka-'ahu-manu who shared their rule of the Hawaiian Kingdom.

CHAPTER 7

The material now available on both the missionaries and the whaling era at Lahaina is voluminous. For Chapter 7, which barely scrapes the surface of Lahaina's story, I relied mainly on Kuykendall's *Hawaiian Kingdom,* Volumes I, II, and III, and Gavan Daws' *Shoal of Time,* and on Mary Charlotte Alexander's *Doctor Baldwin of Lahaina. Grapes of Canaan, Hawaii 1820,* by Albertine Loomis is one of the best general works on the missionaries. It is published by the Hawaiian Mission Children's Society, Honolulu, 1966, and is available everywhere in Hawaii in paperback.

A convenient source is the typescripts found above the offices of the Lahaina Restoration Foundation. These are in boxes accessible to scholars, though uncataloged. They are excerpts from the missionary reports; i.e., the journals of Richards, Stewart and others; books as well as reports, letters and diaries. Most all of the source materials are found (some in originals) in the Library of the Hawaiian Mission Children's Society in Honolulu, probably the best source on missionary history to be found in Hawaii. The Journal of Charles Stewart is important for the early period, 1823-1825.

The study of Lockwood and Rossie Frost, *Rendezvous in Lahaina,* was a valuable source.

Although I have used the story of Kamehameha's paternity by Kahekili in this chapter, it is not an established historical fact. His mother, the young wife of Keoua, the brother of the King of Hawaii, visited the court of King Kamehameha-nui on Maui where she met the King's younger brother and heir, Ka-hekili.

The story goes that, when she returned to the Hawaii court, she was pregnant by Ka-hekili and the child, Kamehameha, was thus his son.

John Papa Ii was in a better position than other historians to know such things as he was a member of the inner court of Liholiho. It was his opinion that Keoua was the true father. (Ii, John Papa, *Fragments of Hawaiian History,* Bishop Museum Press, Honolulu, 1973.)

The question can excite some strong opinions. On the Island of Hawaii there are few who question that Keoua Kuahu-'ula, commonly called Keoua, was the great chief's father. But on Maui, Ka-hekili is more often named as the father. It might have suited the conqueror to lean to one or other view depending on the political circumstances.

Although there may have been political reasons either on the part of Hawaii Island chiefs or that of the Maui chiefs with their strong ties to Kamehameha's high-ranking and favorite wives, the question is not unique in Hawaii. There is an ancient saying that the mother's blood line is certain. The term *po'o lua,* divided or two-headed, was applied to the frequent cases where the father of a child could have been either of two men. Perhaps then, it was a case of *po'o lua* and "only the stars know" who Kamehameha's real father was.

I used material from the booklet put out by the Maui Historical Society, "The Story of Lahaina," and also referred often to the more recent booklet, "Story of Lahaina," an excerpt from a report prepared for the County of Maui by Community Planning, Inc. Inez Ashdown's

"Stories of Old Lahaina" was helpful but more so were my frequent interviews and "talk story" sessions with Mrs. Ashdown who probably carries enough Maui history in her head to fill a shelf of volumes.

As for all my early chapters, S.M. Kamakau's *Ruling Chiefs* was handy and in some instances indispensable. But without Elspeth Sterling's admirable Index to Kamakau, I would have been lost more often than not. The Index, in paperback, is available at Book Cache, Kahului, and at the Vestibule Shop, Bishop Museum, Honolulu.

Some other books which I referred to for Chapter 7 are: Ernest Dodge's *Beyond the Capes* (Little, Brown, Boston, 1971), *New England and the South Seas* by the same author who gives a good short account of the American whaling in the Pacific in Chapter II, "Hunting the Cachalot." I consulted many others, among them the following: *The Whale* (Crescent, N.Y., 1974), *Journal of William Ellis* (Advertiser Publishing, Honolulu, 1963), F. Olmsted's *Incidents of a Whaling Voyage* (Reprint by Tuttle, Rutland, Vermont, 1969), Bradford Smith, *Yankees in Paradise* (Lippincott, N.Y., 1956), A. Campbell, *A Voyage Round the World, 1806-1812* (U.H. Press, Honolulu, 1967).

An interesting observer in the early nineteenth century was Jacques Arago, draftsman to the expedition of Captain Freycinet during the years 1817-18-19, and 20. His narrative was published in London in 1823 and his drawings of Hawaiian people and places are well known. Arago visited "Mowhee." He found Taourae (Kaho'olawe) "without the slightest vestige of vegetation, . . . deserted and uninhabited," but Lahaina he described as "like a garden." The Chiefess whom he met there received him with her daughter seated by her side "unencumbered with drapery." She "tempts you by her unsophisticated caresses." (p. 120). He wrote in a footnote: "we found all that can delight the species at Mowhee; while we met with all that amuses and attaches them at Woahoo . . . at Mowhee, the natives prefer a tranquil life, here (Oahu) they are fond of agitation." (p. 122).

CHAPTER 8

My basic source for the early history of sugar in Hawaii is Kuykendall, Volume I, *The Hawaiian Kingdom*. I also have quoted Daws' history here and there. Much of the material on the sugar industry on Maui is taken from the Centennial report of Wailuku Sugar Company 1862-1962, "A Century of Progress in Sugar Cane Cultivation." The sketch on Edward Bailey is from the *Missionary Album,* Sesquicentennial Edition 1820-1970, Hawaiian Mission Children's Society, Honolulu, 1969, pp. 34-35.

The section on Claus Spreckels on Maui came mainly from Kuykendall, Vol. III and Jacob Adler, *Claus Spreckels, The Sugar King of Hawaii,* UH Press, Honolulu, 1966.

For the stories of the Baldwins, I have also used Kuykendall plus the *Memoir of H.P. Baldwin* by his son, Arthur, privately printed in Cleveland in 1915.

I used the Alexander & Baldwin report "Seventy Five Years a Corporation, 1900-1975" and their publication "Ampersand" for Fall 1977 for information on their history and sugar production. I talked with officials of all three sugar companies on Maui and secured up-to-date information from them. The A & B monthly publication "Maui Today" was a source. Some of the material was taken from the Maui *News* and the Maui *Sun.*

On pineapple, I used local sources: the magazine "Hawaii Business" for August 1969 "Colin Cameron Takes Over at Maui Pine," the Annual Report of Maui Land and Pineapple Company for 1976, and discussion with Joe Hartley, President of Maui Land Pineapple Company.

I consulted many other sources for this chapter, among them, Ethel Damon's *Father Bond of Kohala,* Honolulu, 1927; *The Hawaiian Journal of History,* Volume 5, 1971 "King Cotton, the Spinning Wheel and Loom in the Sandwich Islands," and for the early Chinese sugar masters, Lin Yuke Char, *The Sandalwood Mountains,* Readings and Stories of the Early Chinese in Hawaii, University Press of Hawaii, Honolulu, 1975, and Wai-Jane Char, "Chinese Merchant Adventurers and Sugar Masters in Hawaii: 1802-1852," *The Hawaiian Journal of History,* Vol. 8, 1974.

CHAPTER 9

The first part of this chapter is based on talks with Charles Pili Keau during several historical field trips, a taped interview, and an essay by

Roberta Mercado, one of my students in a course in Maui history in 1976-77.

For the Chinese in Hawaii there are excellent sources. These include the works cited for Chapter 8 and the small book, *The Chinese in Kula* by Diane Mei Lin Mark published by the Hawaii Chinese History Center in Honolulu in 1975. This was my main source on the Chinese on Maui and especially the section on Sun Yat-sen. The material on "Uncle" Shinn as well as the stories of Alfred Boteilho, Tadaichi Fukunaga, and A.B. Sevilla are quoted by permission from the Mayor's report of 1976 and the men concerned.

References for the sections on the Japanese, Portuguese and Filipinos are *A History of the Japanese in Hawaii,* United Japanese Society, Honolulu, 1971; *Portuguese in Hawaii,* Multicultural Center, Honolulu, 1973; Bruno Lasker, *Filipino Immigration,* N.Y., 1969; *Immigrants in Hawaii 1976* State Immigrant Services Center, Honolulu, 1975; and, Sister Mary Dorita, *Filipino Immigration* to Hawaii, U.H. Thesis, 1954.

My principal guide for this chapter was A.W. Lind, *Hawaii's People,* U.H. Press, Honolulu, 1967.

Gavan Daw's *Shoal of Time* was the general source for the section on the haoles; especially the story of James Makee of Rose Ranch. Kuykendall, Volume IV, provided basic information.

Additional references on Sun Yat-sen in Hawaii are Restarick, H.B., *Sun Yat-sen: Liberation of China,* Yale Press, 1931 and Lee, Shao Chang, "The Chinese 'Suns' in Hawaii," *Paradise of the Pacific,* Honolulu, November 1937.

CHAPTERS 10 AND 11

Armine von Tempski's *Born in Paradise,* (Duell, Sloan and Pearce, New York, 1940) gives a fascinating picture of growing up on the big Haleakala Ranch on Maui in the 1930's. Nearly all the characters in the book are dead except "Jackie," who is Mrs. Inez Ashdown.

A number of local people gave information on the period after World War I and during World War II. The story of the sinking of the military transport off Hana and the story of the air crash which resulted in the deaths of at least 20 marines on the ground are from Robert Schmitt's article "Catastrophic Mortality in Hawaii," in the *Hawaiian Journal of History,* vol. 3, 1969.

Nearly all the material on the Fourth Marines and Camp Maui was taken from *The Fourth Marine Division During World War II*, Carl W. Proehl, editor, Infantry Journal Press, Washington, 1946. This Press is no longer in existence but has been taken over by the Association of the U.S. Army in Washington.

The book is unusually well written and is profusely illustrated including many pictures of Camp Maui. It is out of print but available at the Kahului public library. I also interviewed two men who were stationed here with the Fourth in 1944-45.

My information on the men *from* Maui who served in World War II is from John A. Rademaker, *These Are Americans,* The Japanese Americans in Hawaii in World War II, Pacific Books, Palo Alto, 1951, and Thomas D. Murphy, *Ambassador in Arms,* the Story of Hawaii's 100th Battalion, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1954.

A more up-to-date reference is William Petersen's *Japanese Americans,* Random House, New York, 1971, from which I took the brief summary on the 442nd Combat Team. Strangely enough, I could not find out the statistics regarding armed forces service by men and women from Maui. I mainly wanted to know how many served altogether in World War II, how many served overseas from Maui, how many were lost (I finally got this figure by simply counting the names on the list posted at the Memorial Gymnasium), what honors or awards were won by Maui men for bravery, etc. I called and visited veterans of Foreign Wars, called the presidents of the 442nd and 100 clubs both on Maui and on Oahu. They said there was no breakdown on the Maui figures. I called Veterans' Administration, Army Recruiting, County Information, and various individuals each of whom referred me to someone else.

The story about Eddie Tam is from the local newspaper accounts, mainly the *Advertiser*, Honolulu, December 14, 1966. The *Star Bulletin, The Advertiser*, the *Maui News*, were sources for information on Mayor Elmer Cravalho together with a tape of an interview he gave to me and my students in March 1977 and articles in *Honolulu Magazine* (April 1978) and *Hawaii Business* (magazine), January 1978.

Quotes about the role of the County on Maui are taken from the Mayor's Annual Report for 1977. Material for Chapter 11 comes from current journals, newspapers, and the observations and opinions of the author during a decade of residence on the island.

INDEX

Acushnet, 102
Adler, Jacob, 125
Alapa troops, 17
Alapa'i, 12, 13-14
Alenuihaha Channel, 60
Alexander, A. C., 160
Alexander, Sam T., 120, 122, 125-127
Alexander, W. D., 217
Alexander, William, 160
Alexander & Baldwin, 120, 123, 125-133, 159, 160, 220
Ali'i, 7, 83-84
Allen, Edward W., 211
Alternative Economic Futures for Hawaii, 186
American Factors, 131, 159
Anderson, Bern, 208, 212
Andrews, Reverend, 90, 105
Anson, Lord, 20
"Apostle of the Maui," 109-110
Arago, Jacques, 219
Archaeology, 157-158, 193
Armas, Joaquin, 109
Armstrong, Richard, 117
Artists' colony, 187-188
Aryoshi, George, 149
Ashdown, Inez, 199, 205, 214 218-219, 221
Astrolabe, 60-67 *passim*, 211, 214
Attu, 174

Bailey, Edward T., 119-120, 220
Bailey House, 120
Baldwin, Dwight, 98, 99, 103, 104, 108-109, 117
Baldwin, Emily (née Alexander), 126
Baldwin, F. F., 160
Baldwin, Harry A., 160
Baldwin, Henry P., 120, 122, 125-128, 130, 177, 220
Baldwin Packers, 130
Barrow, Tui Terrance, 22n
Battle of the Red-Mouthed Gun, 56
Beaglehole, J. C., 35-36, 41, 208
Big Five, 159, 186
Big Island. *See* Hawaii, island of
Bingham, Hiram, 81
Bishop Museum, 158, 189, 197
Bligh, William, 29n, 31, 197
Blonde, 87, 88, 114
Boki, 81, 88, 114
Bond, Elias, 117
Born in Paradise (von Tempsky), 166, 221
Boston Columbian Sentinel, 45, 210
Botany Bay, 67
Boteilho, Alfred ("Flako"), 146-147
Boteilho, Antonia, 146
Boteilho, Laura, 146, 147
Boteilho, Mariano, 146
Boussole, 60-67 *passim*, 211, 214
Brewer, C., II, 118
Brewer Plantation, 118
Britannia, 44
British Expedition (1786), 68-70, 214
Brown, Lydia, 118
Bruce, Leslie, 158
Burney, James, 27, 37, 206, 207
Burns, John, 149, 180
Byron, Lord, 87

C. Brewer and Company, 115, 118, 119, 132, 159
California gold rush, 114-115
"Camelford Affair," 212
Cameron, Colin C., 130-131

Cameron, Frances (née Baldwin), 130
Cameron, J. Walter, 130
Camp Maui, 165-171, 222
Campbell, Archibald, 76
Captain Cook in Hawaii (Barrow), 22n
Castle, A. C., 160
Castle & Cooke, 115, 159
Catholics, 109-110
Cattle, 71
Chaminade College, 197
Charles and Henry, 102
Chatham, 215
Chinese immigrants, 113-114, 116-117, 118, 138-143, 178, 221
Chinese in Kula (Mark), 221
Chinese Revolution, 141, 142, 143
Chong How Fo, Reverend and Mrs., 142-143
City of San Francisco, 121
Clark, Captain, 100-101
Clerke, Charles, 22, 27, 34, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 52, 63
Cleveland, Captain, 97
Commission on the Year 2000, 186
Cook, James, 1-2, 18, 19-41, 52, 113, 197, 208
Cooke, J. P., 160
Cornwell, William H., 120
Cotton industry, 118
Cravalho, Elmer F., 141, 179-181, 186, 222
Cravalho, Manuel, 141
Crowningburg-Amalu, Sammy, 206

Daedalus, 72
Damien, Father, 110
Daniel, 100
Davis, Isaac, 47, 48, 53
Daws, Gavan, 19, 43, 114, 221
De Langle, 63, 64, 66-67
De Lesseps, Viscount, 67n
Democratic Party, 177-178, 180
Diamond Head, 57
Dibble, S., 209
Dickinson, 114
Dillingham, Walter F., 159, 160, 186
Dillon, Peter, 67
Discovery, 21-41 *passim*, 70, 198, 207 213, 215
Dixon, George, 60, 68-69, 214
Dodge, Ernest, 219
Dondo, Mathurin, 214
Dwight Baldwin House, 187

East Maui, 5, 61, 127
East Maui Irrigation Co., 130
Easter Island, 6, 59-60
Edict of Toleration, 110
Education, 104-106
Edwards, Captain, 118
Eleanora, 45-47, 139, 144
Electricity, 124-125
Ellis, William, 20, 95, 198, 206-208, 216
Emory, Kenneth, 153, 205-206
English archives, 197-198
Environmental protection, 192-193
Ewa, 51
Exclusion Act (1924), 148

Fair American, 47-48, 53, 56
Felice, 138
Ferns, synopsis of, 119-120
Fiji, 6
Filipino immigrants, 151-154
Fook, Ah, 141
Fornander, Abraham, 3, 7, 209, 210
French explorers, 60-67, 214
Frenchmen's Harbor, 65
Freycinet, Captain, 219
Frost, Lockwood and Rossie, 199, 218
Fuku Construction, Inc., 149
Fukunaga, Shoemon, 149-150
Fukunaga, Tadaichi, 149-151

Gaetano, Juan, 20, 208
Galaup, Jean Francois. *See* La Pérouse, Compte de
Gassner, Julius S., 211
Gen. Royal T. Frank, 167
Geology, 4-6, 205
G. I. Bill, 177
"Giggle Hill," 175
"Gold-Coast," 193
Golf Villas, 131
Gooch, 72
Gore, John, 38, 40, 41
Grapes of Canaan (Loomis), 217
Great Britain: Hawaiian Islands ceded to, 71, 101
Great Mahele, 118
Green, Richard T., 102

Ha'alilio, Timothy, 107-108
Hackfeld, 115
Haiku, 10, 118, 143, 171, 184, 185
Haiku Plantation, 120
Hale Hoikeike, 120
Hale Pa'i, 106
Haleakala, 49, 122, 127, 161, 188
Haleakala National Park, 193
Haleakala Ranch, 165
Haleki'i, 13
Hale-o-Pi'ilani, 10
Haliimaile Plantation, 118
Hamakua, 18, 27, 55
Hamakua Ditch, 122, 123, 127-128
Hamakuapoko, 131
Hamoa, 61
Hana, 5, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 28, 49, 60, 77, 109, 131, 193
Haoles, 44, 76, 159-163
Harvest, 111
Haven of Pi'ilani, 10
Hawaii, island of, 73, 76, 81, 82; and Cook, 29-38; sugar industry, 114, 117, 118; war with Maui, 9, 11-18, 48-50
Hawaii, State of, 183; Constitution, 106; Department of Planning and Economic Development, 186; House of Representatives, 179, 180, 181; Parks and Recreation program, 157
Hawaii Nei: An Idyll (Bailey), 120
Hawaiian Commercial and Sugar Company, 120, 121, 122-123, 125-126, 131, 132, 133
Hawaiian Immigration Society, 136
Hawaiian Islands: annexed by United States, 128; ceded to Great Britain, 71, 101; conquered by Kamehameha, 51-58; and Cook, 1-2, 19-41; creation of, 4-5; discovered by Polynesians, 6-7; native culture, 154-159, 193; native language publications, 105, 107; native population (kanakas), 116, 135-136, 137; Revolution of 1893, 126
Hawaiian Kingdom (Kuykendall), 75, 135
Hawaiian Mission Children's Society, 199, 218
Hawaiian Sugar Planters Association, 146, 153
Hawaii's Business, 181
Heftel, Cecil, 133
Heiau, 10, 84
Hekuawa, 17
Hele-mau Trail, 205
Helio, 109-110
Hergest, Captain, 72, 74
"Hill of the Whale," 55
Hill of Uni, 10
Hilo, 52, 54
Hina of the Underworld, 4
Hippies, 184-185
Historic preservation, 189-190
Ho ao ceremony, 84

Hoapili, 79, 80, 82, 83, 85, 86, 87, 88, 96; as governor, 100, 101, 102-103, 105
Hoapili-wahine (Mrs. Hoapili), 102
Hobron, James, 120
Hobron, T. H., 120
Hodges, Tony, 192
Homesteads (kuleanas), 119, 143
Hommon, Rob, 158
Hongwanji Mission, 150
Honokawai, 14
Honolulu, 50, 80, 81, 88, 90, 92, 94, 98, 101, 102, 114, 116, 117, 143
Honolulu Academy of Arts, 197
Honolulu Advertiser, 177, 179, 203
Honolulu Chamber of Commerce, 186
Honolulu Star-Bulletin, 167, 181
Honua'ula, 45
Horses, 97
House of Pi'ilani, 10
Howell, Milton, 192
Human sacrifices, 56, 84, 85
Hundred years' war, 11-18
Hung Men Society, 140
Hungtai sugar works, 114

Iao Valley, 13, 51, 53, 128, 158
Ii, John Papa, 218
Ilocano, 153
Immigrants, 116, 118, 136-138, 221
Inouye, Dan, 149
Iolani School, 142
Iphigenia, 138
Irrigation projects, 122-123, 127-128, 132

J. B. Castle and Associates, 125
Janion, Aubrey, 211
Japanese immigrants, 147-151
Japanese School, 150
John Palmer, 100
Johnson, Howard ("Smiley"), 174

Ka-'ahu-manu, Elizabeth, 58, 75, 76-83, 86, 91-92, 102, 104-105, 109, 114, 215-216, 217
Kaahumanu Church, 82
Kaanapali, 18, 186-187, 188
Ka-'eo, 15, 26, 39, 73, 80, 213
Ka-'eo-ku-lani, 53, 57, 75
Kaeppler, Adrienne, 198
Ka-hahana, 50
Kahakuloa, 213
Kaheekere. *See* Ka-hekili
Ka-hekili, 12, 75, 77, 96, 218; conquers Oahu, 50-51; defeated by Kamehameha, 51-57, 210; and Vancouver, 72, 73-74, 212-214; and war of Hawaiian succession, 48-50
Kahiki, 7
Kahiki-nui, 7, 110
Kahikoa, 175n
Kahipa period, 5
Kaho'olawe, 5, 38, 69, 171, 189, 193-194, 219
Kahu, 54, 57n
Kahului, 23, 53, 89, 124, 167, 169, 172, 174
Kahului Airport, 121
Kahului Library, 197
Kahuna, 84
Kahuna-nui, 84
Kailua, 51
Kailua-Kona, 118
Kaina, 44, 70, 71
Kalakaua, 122, 124
Kalama Hawaii, 106
Ka-lani-ku-pule, 51, 53, 75
Ka-lani-'opu'u, 15-16, 17, 18, 26, 28, 29, 31-32, 34, 37-38, 46n, 48, 84, 85, 209
Kalapapa, 129
Ka-lola, 16, 17, 46, 53-54, 84
Kalolopahu, 47
Ka-maka-helei, 40

Kamakau, S. M., 18n, 49, 51n, 78, 79, 96, 106, 206, 208-209, 210
Kamamalu, 87-88
Kamchatka Peninsula, 21, 40, 67
Ka-me’e-ia-moku, 47, 96
Kamehameha I, 15, 16, 17, 18, 28-29, 44, 47-50, 76, 77, 78-79, 83-86, 102, 138-139, 209, 216, 218; conquers Maui and other Hawaiian Islands, 51-58, 210; *peleleu* fleet, 95-97; and Vancouver, 70-74
Kamehameha II, 75, 81, 85, 86, 87-88, 102. *See also* Liholiho, Iolani
Kamehameha III, 75, 81, 82, 85, 88, 102-103, 105, 106, 107, 109, 118, 216. *See also* Kau-i-ke-aouli
Kamehameha IV, 48
Kamehameha-nui, 13, 14
Kanawai Akua, 12
Kane, Herb K., 206
Kanina, 31
Kao, 31, 32, 37
Ka-’opu-iki, 46
Kapalua, 130, 131, 158, 190
Kapu, 31-32, 46, 63, 71, 158-159
Kassan Bay, 174
Kauai, 15, 21, 25, 26, 33, 39-40, 53, 55, 57, 73, 77-78, 80, 81, 95, 97; sugar industry, 115, 117, 118
Kau-i-ke-aouli, 75, 85, 86, 88-89, 90, 91 *See also* Kamehameha III
Ka’uiki, 16, 49, 78
Ka-uki, 14
Ka-umu-ali’i, 39, 77-78, 80, 81, 87, 97
Kaupo, 5, 10, 13, 14, 16, 18, 49, 61, 62, 71-72, 90, 96, 109, 110
Kau-wahine, 50
Kawaihae, 12, 55, 95
Kealakekua Bay, 20, 31, 33, 38, 47, 52, 60, 68, 70, 139
Ke-ali’i-a-ho-nui, 80
Keanae, 213
Keau, Annie Faustino (formerly Mrs. Pili), 155
Keau, Charles Pili, 154-159, 220
Keau, David, 155
Keawe, 49
Ke’e-au-moku, 56, 70, 76, 78, 218
Ke-eli-holani, Ruth, 124
Ke-kau-like, 11, 12-13, 57n, 58, 75, 80, 83
Ke-kui-apo-iwa, 84
Kenui, Pili and Koleka, 155
Keokea, 140, 141
Ke-opu-o-lani, 53-54, 75, 79-80, 82, 83-86, 102, 104, 107, 108, 216-217
Keoua, 51, 52, 54-55, 56, 96, 218
Kepaniwai, battle of, 51
Kepaniwai Park, 158
Kiha-a-Pi’ilani, 9-10
Kiha-a-Pi’ilani Highway, 10
Kihei, 74, 108, 188-189
Kilauea, 55
King, James, 25, 29, 34, 36, 37, 40, 197
King George, 60, 68-69
Kipahulu, 16, 61, 71-72, 96, 110, 131, 192-193
Kipahulu Church, 193
Kipahulu Plantation, 166
Kiwala’o, 17-18, 48, 52, 84, 217
Kohala, 12-13, 117, 119, 207
Kokomo, 175
Koleamoku, 9-10
Koloa Plantation, 115
Kona, 12, 51, 80, 187, 207
Ko’olau gap, 205
Korean immigrants, 151
Korean War, 183
Krauss, Bob, 177
Kuakini, Governor, 118
Kuhina nui, 79
Ku-’ka’ili-moku, 48, 53, 55, 85, 216
Kula, 13, 99, 194; immigrants, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145

Kumaka, 9-10
Kumukahi, 30
Kuykendall, Ralph S., 75, 105, 135, 136, 205

Labor unions, 177
Ladd & Company, 115
Lahaina, 12, 18, 38, 53, 54, 72, 73, 76, 80-91 *passim*, 93-111, 129, 219; sugar industry, 114, 117-127, 131; tourism, 184, 186-188, 194
Lahaina Roads, 169
Lahaina Restoration Foundation, 187, 199, 217
Lahainaluna, 119, 120
Lahainaluna School, 105-106, 107, 109
Lamanon, 67
Lanai, 5, 15, 18, 39, 52, 57, 60, 68, 69
Land Commission, 119
Land development, 129-130, 131, 162, 185-194 *passim*
Land division, 118, 143
La Pérouse, Compte de, 20, 45, 59-67, 68-69, 211-212
La Pérouse Bay, 62, 72, 144, 158, 215
Le'ahi, 57
Lele-io-hoka, 90
Lelekawa (cliff leaping), 213-214
Lelia Byrd, 97
Leper colony, 110, 129
Lewis mill, 120
Life of the Land, 192
Liholiho, Iolani, 75, 79, 81, 85, 86, 96. *See also* Kamehameha II
Liliha, 87
Liliuokalani, 122, 128
Lind, A. W., 221
Lindberg, Charles, 193
Literacy, 104
Lituja Bay, 65
London, Jack, 165-166
Lono-a-Pi'ilani, 8-9
Loomis, Albertine, 217
Loomis, Elisha, 88-89, 216
Lopaka, 48, 53
Los Majos, 20, 208
Louzada, James, 120
Lua-ehu laws, 82
Luomala, K., 205

Ma'alaea, 16, 105, 171, 188
Macao, 40
McCaughey, Hamilton and Jean, 192
McDonald, Charles, 103
Maigret, Bishop, 110
Mailekini Heiau, 55
Makawao, 119, 120, 129, 145, 171
Makawao Church, 128
Makee, James, 118, 161-162
Makena, 16, 131, 185, 188
Maliko gulch, 127-128
Malo, David, 82, 106, 107, 109
Mana, 52, 55, 83, 209
Manahini, 207
Manoa Valley, 92, 114
Maria Lanikula Church, 110
Mark, Diane Mei Lin, 221
Marquesas, 6, 102
Massachusetts, 45, 144, 199, 210
Massacre Bay, 67
Matson Navigation Company, 129, 130, 189
Matsunaga Spark, 149
Maui, early history: conquered by Kamehameha, 51-58, 76; and Cook, 23-29, 33; French and British expeditions bypass one another, 68-70; geological creation, 4-6; and La Pérouse, 59, 60-65; Rollin's description of natives, 64-65; and Vancouver, 71-73; wars, 9, 11-18, 48-51
Maui Community College, 197
Maui Country Club, 121
Maui County: Board of Supervisors, 177, 191; budget, 190; Chairman,

177, 178, 179, 181; Council, 191; Mayor, 180, 181, 191, 194, 199; Planning Department, 186, 190-191, 199, 223; Vice Squad, 185
Maui Factors, 180
Maui Historical Society, 158, 199, 218
Maui Land & Pineapple Company, 131, 190
Maui Memorial Gymnasium, 176, 222
Maui Pineapple Company, 130-131, 133, 157
Maui, The Last Hawaiian Place (Wenkam), 3
Maui-tikitiki-a-Taranga, 2-4, 205
Maui-tinihanga. *See* Maui-tikitiki-a-Taranga
Mauna, Samoa, 66
Mauna Loa, 209
Maunaolu Girls' School, 119
Maunaolu Seminary, 129
Mau'umae, 46
MDG Supply, 141
Meares, John, 138
Measles epidemics, 87, 109
Mellen, Kathleen, 215
Melville, Herman, 102
Menehune, 6-7
Menzies, 213
Mercado, Roberta, 221
Metcalf, Simon, 45-48, 139, 143, 210
Metcalf, Thomas, 46
Mikapala, 82
Mink, Patsy Takemoto, 149
Missionaries, 93, 94; Baldwin, 108-109; Catholics, 109-110; and education, 104-106; and Hoapili, 85-86, 102-103; and Ka'ahu-manu, 80-83, 92, 215-216; and Ke-opu-o-lani, 85-86; and Nahi-'ena-'ena, 85, 87-89; Richards, 106-108; and sugar industry, 114, 117; temperance movement, 103-104
Moi, 8
Moi, Liu, 139
Mokulau, 14
Mokuohai, battle of, 52
Molokai, 5, 7, 14, 15, 23-24, 39, 50, 52, 54, 55, 57, 60, 69, 110, 129
Molokini, 61
Mt. Ball, 109
"Mowee." *See* Maui
Murphy, Thomas D., 223

Nahi-'ena-'ena, Harriet, 84, 85, 86-91, 216
Nahiku, 194
Na-mahana, 75, 78
Napili, 190
Napoleonic Wars, 211, 212
Neptune, 95, 215
New Zealand, 6
Newspapers, 106
Niau-pio chiefs, 83
Niihau, 21, 40
Nimitz, Admiral, 170
Nisei, 148-149, 176, 177, 222
North West American, 138
Northwestern Mutual Life Insurance Company, 189
Nu Caliponi, 116
Nudist colony, 185
Nu'uanu, 50, 92, 210

Oahu, 14, 15, 17, 21, 39, 69, 72-73, 97, 99, 101, 108, 117; conquered by Ka-hekili, 50-57 *passim*, 215; smallpox epidemic, 97, 108; and Vancouver, 72-73
Oceanic Steamship Lines, 125
Olowahu, 53, 131
Olowalu Massacre, 45, 46-47, 72, 144, 199, 210
Olowalu period, 5
Opili, 207

Pa'ao, 207

Pahupas, 56n
Paia, 121, 128, 130, 141, 146, 179, 184; immigrants, 141, 146, 149, 150
Pak Hoy Wong, 142
Palapala (writing), 82, 86, 89, 90, 104-105
Palea, 31
Pali Ka-hekili, 213
Pan-American, 166, 192
Paukukalo, 14, 155, 157
Peabody Museum (Salem, Mass.), 44, 144, 198-199
Pease, Captain, 102
Pele, 54
Peleleu fleet, 95-97
Petero, 109, 110
Peterson, William, 222
Petropavlovsk, Russia, 21, 40, 67n
Philanthropy, 129
Phillips, Molesworth, 35-36
Pierrevert, 64
Pi'ikea, 8
Pi'ilani, 8, 10, 206
Pi'ilani Highway, 10, 13, 110
Pili, Charles, 153
Pineapple Hill, 190
Pineapple industry, 130-131, 133, 220
Pioneer Inn, 187
Pioneer Mill Company, 131, 132, 133, 186
Politics, 124, 128, 149, 160, 177-181
Polynesian, 117
Polynesians, 205-206; and Cook, 22n; discover Hawaii, 6-8
Population growth rate, 116, 135-138, 183n
Portlock, Nathaniel, 52, 56n, 60, 68-69, 210, 213, 214
Portuguese immigrants, 144-147, 163n, 179
Potatoes, 99, 116
President Taft, 152
Printing presses, 105, 106
Proehl, Carl W., 222
Pryor, Sam, 192
Puerto Rican immigrants, 151
Pule (prayer), 82, 89
Pung, Edwin, 155
Pu'uki, 96
Pu'u-kohola Temple, 55-56
Pu-unene, 14, 124, 130

Queen Charlotte, 60, 68-69
Queen Emma, 48, 124-125

Rademaker, John A., 222
Ranching, 180-181
Reciprocity Treaty, 120, 121
Religious freedom, 110
Rendezvous in Lahaina (Frost), 199
Republican Party, 128, 160, 177-178
Resolution, 2, 21-41 *passim*, 70, 198, 209
Reynolds, Stephen, 118
Rice, Harold W., 177-178
Richards, William, 87-88, 89-90, 100, 106-108
Richards-Ha'alilio Mission, 107
Rikeke. *See* Richards, William
Riots, 100-101
Rockefeller, Laurence, 192
Rollin, Doctor, 64-65, 212
Rose Ranch, 161
Royal Lahaina Hotel, 188
Rudkin, Charles N., 211
Ruling Chiefs of Hawaii (Kamakau), 18n, 106, 206, 219

St. Anthony's Church, 110, 153
St. Anthony's School, 141, 150
St. Joseph's Church, 145
Samoa, 6, 66
Samwell, David, 27, 32, 39, 208, 210
Sandwich Island Mirror, 117
Sandwich Islands. *See* Hawaiian Islands

Santa Cruz Islands, 67
Sato, Sada, 150
Sato, Tadashi, 187
Schmidt, Harry, 170
Schmitt, Robert, 221-223
Schools, 104-106, 129
Schussler, Hermann, 122, 123
Seamen's Hospital, 199
Seibu syndicate, 185
Seven Pools, 193
Sevilla, A. B., 152-154
Shenandoah, 111
Sheraton-Maui Hotel, 188, 214
Sherrod, Robert, 167-168
Shin, Shing Sam, 139
Shinn, Ten Sung ("Uncle Shinn"), 139-141
Shoal of Time (Daws), 19, 43, 221
Simpson, George, 209
Sinclair, Marjorie, 216
Sinoto, Y., 158
Smallpox epidemic, 97, 108
Smith, William O., 160
Society Islands, 6, 7, 21
South Point, 7
Spanish explorations, 19-20, 27, 63, 109, 206-208, 209, 212
Spanish immigrants, 151
Spreckels, Claus, 120-126, 220
Spreckels, Gus and Rudolph, 125
Spreckels, J. D., 124
Spreckelsville, 121, 124
Star, 102
Steam power, 118, 119
Sterling, Elspeth, 199, 219
Stewart, Charles, 89, 104
Stewart, Harriet, 89
Sugar industry, 111, 113-133, 219-220; and *haoles*, 159-160, 161; and immigrants, 136, 137, 138, 139, 146
Sun Ah Min, 141-142; wife, 142-143
Sun Yat-sen, 141-143, 222; wife, 142-143
Tahiti, 6, 7, 22n, 118
Takayama, Soichi, 155
Talin, 67
Tam, Eddie, 177-179, 222
Tamaahmaah. *See* Kamehameha
Terreeoboo. *See* Ka-lani-'opu'u
Thaddeus, 80
Theo Davies and Company, 159
Thetis, 118
"Thunder King." *See* Ka-hekili
Titeeree. *See* Ka-hekili
Tong see (sugar masters), 114, 139
Tourism, 129, 131, 163, 185, 186-187, 189, 193, 194-195
Townsend, Ebenezer, Jr., 95, 216
Trevenen, 32
Tutuila, Samoa, 66
Twain, Mark, 165

Ulupalakua, 131, 161
Ulupalakua Ranch, 185
Umi-a-Liloa, 8, 9, 10
Unalaska, 24
United States' annexation of Hawaii, 128
United States Army: 100th Infantry Battalion, 176; 442nd Combat Team, 176; Jungle Training Center, 171
United States Civil War, 111, 115, 116, 119
United States Department of Agriculture: price supports, 133
United States Marine Corps: Fourth Division, 167-175, 222
United States Navy, 193-194
United States Revolutionary War, 41
Upcountry, 145, 147, 180

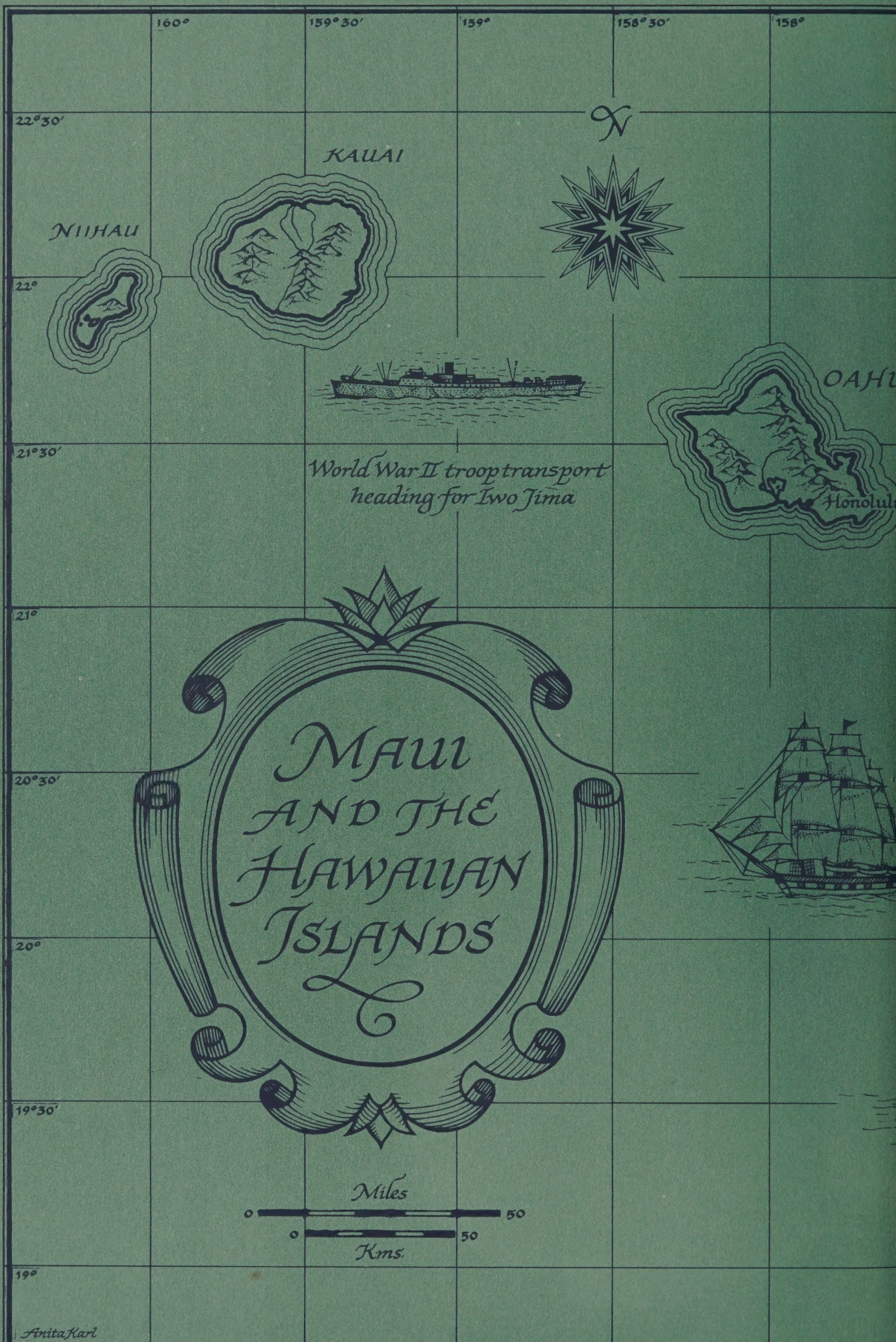
Vahi Katekimo (Catholic catechism), 110
Valley Island, 192
Vancouver, B. C., 74

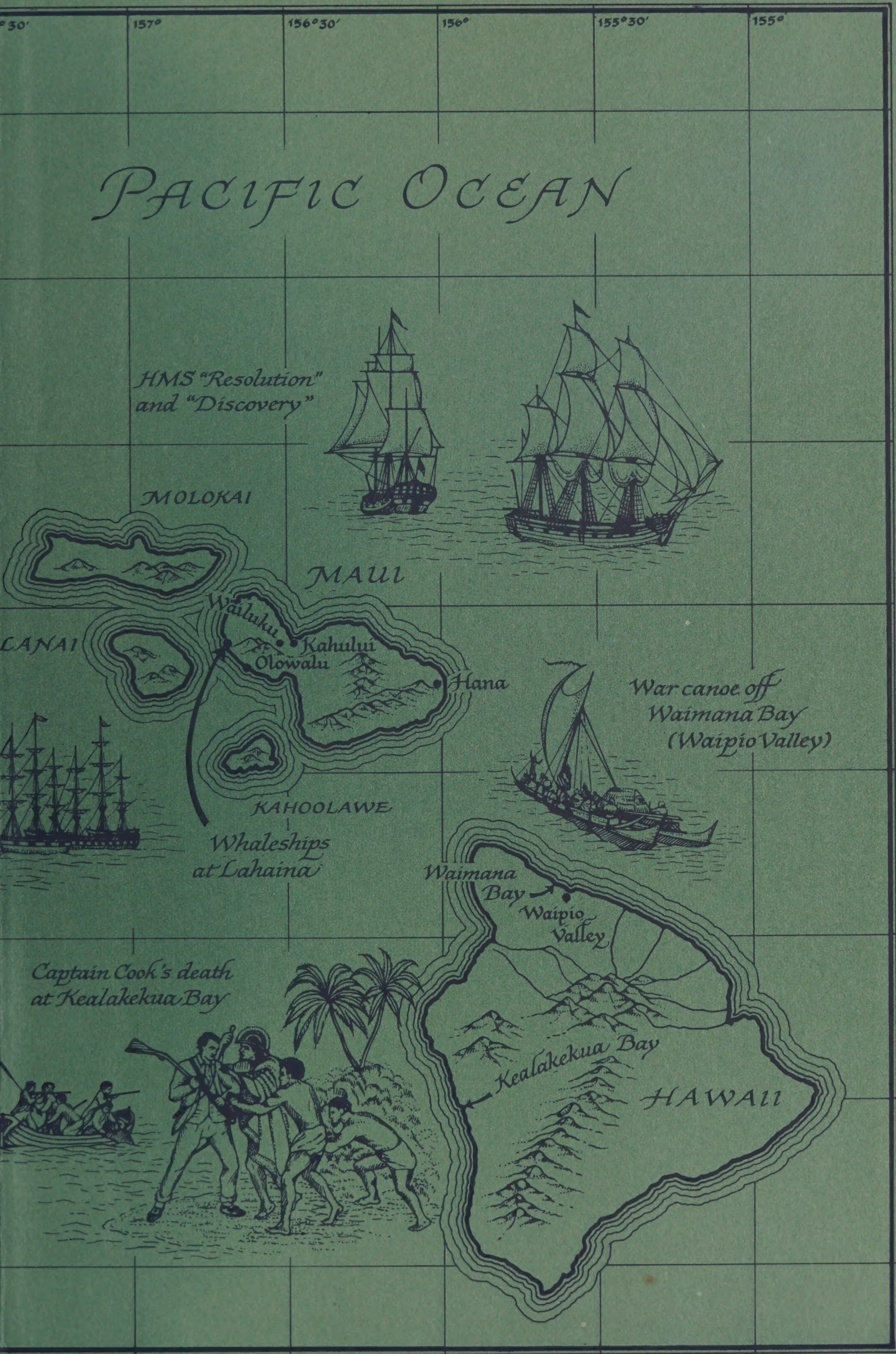
Vancouver, George, 12, 20, 44, 45, 70-74, 76, 139, 208, 210, 212-213, 215
Vanikoro, Santa Cruz Islands, 67
Venereal Disease, 24-25, 65, 209
Vietnam War, 183
Villiers, 209
Volcanic activity, 54-55
Von Tempsky, Armine, 165-166, 221
Von Tempsky, Louis, 165
Voyage to the Pacific Ocean (Cook), 197, 208

Waihee, 120
Waihee Plantation, 122
Waihee Sugar Company, 123
Waikapu, 120, 121, 124
Waikapu Plantation, 120
Waikiki, 97, 166
Wailea, 129, 130, 158, 189-190
Wailu, 109
Wailua-iki, 18
Wailua-Keanae, 210
Wailuku, 16-17, 18, 26, 51, 82, 83, 109, 110, 118, 119, 120, 171; immigrants, 141, 149, 150; sugar industry, 114, 117, 119, 123
Wailuku Female Seminary, 119
Wailuku Plantation, 119
Wailuku Sugar Company, 119, 120, 131, 132, 133, 199, 220
Waimana Bay, 55, 56
Waimea Bay, 23, 39, 56n, 73, 108
Waine'e Church, 81, 90, 103, 108
Waiola Church, 108
Waipio period, 5
Waipio Valley, 7, 55
Walker, Allen & Company, 116
War canoes (*wa'a peleleu*), 95-97
War of Hawaiian Succession, 48-50
Weapons, modern, 24, 43-45, 51, 53, 56, 74, 97
Wenkam, Robert, 3, 205
West Maui, 5, 13, 14, 94
Whaling industry, 93, 94, 95, 97-102, 111, 114, 115, 144
Williamson, 36
Wives: "favorite," 76-83, 91; "sacred," 83-86
World War I, 166
World War II, 148-149, 150-151, 156-157, 164-176, 221-222

Young, John, 45, 47, 48, 53, 72, 76, 139, 207

Phillips Library
3 6234 00117421 1


160°
159°30′
159°
158°30′
158°
22°30′
22°
21°30′
21°
20°30′
20°
19°30′
19°
N
KAUAI
NIIHAU
OAH
Honolul
World War II troop transport heading for Iwo Jima
Maui and the Hawaiian Islands
Miles
0
50
0
50
Kms.
Anita Karl


30′
157°
156°30′
156°
155°30′
155°
PACIFIC OCEAN
HMS "Resolution" and "Discovery"
MOLOKAI
MAUI
Wailuku
Kahului
Olowalu
Hana
LANAI
KAHOOLAWE
Whaleships at Lahaina
War canoe off Waimana Bay (Waipio Valley)
Waimana Bay
Waipio Valley
Captain Cook's death at Kealakekua Bay
Kealakekua Bay
HAWAII